THE

FAMOVS HISTORIE OF MONTELYON, KNIGHT OF THE ORACLE, and Sonne to the *Renowned* PERSICLES *King* of ASSYRIA.

SHEWING,

His ſtrange Birth, Unfortunate Love, Perilous Adventures in Armes, and how he came *to the knowledge of his Parents.*

Interlaced, with much variety of Pleaſant and *delightfull Diſcourſe.*

By Emanuel Ford the Author of Parismus & Parismenos

Printed at London by B. ALSOP, and T. FAVCET, dwelling in *Grubſtreet*, neere the lower Pumpe.
1633.

TO THE GENTLE-

men Readers, health.

GEntlemen, your well tryed fauours haue ſet me ſo farre on fire in my further proceedings, that I, that euer hitherto followed the endeauours of *Fierce Playnes*, ſeeme now for your pleaſures to become euen a bowe-fellow prodigall, ſpending the ſumme of my ſtore to the vttermoſt, as long as poſſibly it laſteth.

If you find any crackt coyne in theſe my liberall expences, yet for *Foord's* ſake, affoord them ſtarling, and winking at ſmall faults, excuſe me to be miſtaken, and ſo amongſt Friends may it paſſe for currant, I am not of the humour of the new Fangling Taylor, that for euery new wrought ſuite frames a new faſhion: nor of theyr preſumptuous Nature, that of themſelues being but *Vixins*, face out their attempts with heroicall Lyons looks: but I alway the ſame, reſt euer forward to entreat, carefull to requeſt, and dayly addicted deuoutly to attend humility. Againſt biting *Theon's* tooth, I remayne alway patient proofe: and the rather conſidering the ſingular ſentence of one of the ſeauen *Sages, viz.*

To the Reader.

That even as for a man of underſtanding, being prayſed to be led therby unto a ſelfe-loved opinion of his own laudable parts: or as ſelfe-willed preſuming on his high deſerts, may ſeeme an eſpeciall argument of no ſmall folly: ſo likewiſe for being diſcommended, to remaine even *amort* with heavie cheere, and drooping mind, figuring his ſad lookes, like to the Anatomy of death, is a plain proofe of his ſcarcity of counſell, want of patience, (which Phyloſophers hold the ſoveraign'ſt vertue that belongs to the qualifi:d indument of mortality) and (which is worſe penury of reaſon, *Affectus temperare ſuos*. I propoſe not this Gentle Reader, as if Stoycally I regarded your judicious cenſure, but rather portray a *Preludium*, how indifferently I can endure the divers taunting reports of the envious: as for your ever regarded judgements, I account it the ſanctuary, wherein my tyred ſcorce may finde refuge, the chiefe *greſſe*, onely whereby my feeble invention aſcendeth; the *Coloſſe* that wholly ſupporteth my endeavors; yea I reckon it all my being, all my eſſence, all my good.

As therefore with a favourable ſmile, you ere-while entertayned *Pariſmus* and *Pariſmenos*, my elder off-ſprings, with ſo cheerefull an aſpect; now caſt your lookes on my *Monſelyon*, whoſe forwardneſſe to winne fame, you ſhall perceive nothing inferiour to the promptneſſe of the former, although by birth and courſe of time the yonger. Oh he can acqu:int you with the wonders of Chivalry, with admirable acts and doubty deeds, ſupported alway with a Fayery ſuffrage, as was *Vlyſſes* in his ten yeares venture by the ayde of *Pallas*.

Your well-willing acceptance, and kind conceit of him, is all the recompence I aske for my trauell, and I wiſh no more, ſo (I truſt) you will no leſſe, grant this, and make my

CR-

endeavours proſperous: deny that, and leave mee ſo utterly infortunate, as hopeleſſe for ever of every good ſucceſſe: ever found bountifull in giving the one; ſo my ſelfe will not reſt ingratefull for the other: that both in one, & one in both, may not only augment your longing pleaſures, which I heartily wiſh, but alſo inrich my laſting content, which I hope you as courteouſly will.

Your Well-willer,

EMANVEL FOORD.

In praiſe of the Author.

SHould Monuments of worthy deeds,
Be ſwallowed of Oblivion:
What Honour (whereon Vertue feeds)
Remembred reſts for Merites done?
Whence ſhall proceed that ſparke of Fame,
That ſets on fire the Noble-Heart,
For Honour of his Birth and Name,
In Valours Field to act his part?
Had not great *Alexander* view'd
The Blazons of *Achilles* praiſe,
Whereat with enuious Eye, he rew'd
The world, beyond him we ſhould raiſe.
Hee ſcarcely to Subdue had ſought,
The World vnder his Command:
Nor had his Conqueſts Honour bought,
According to his Mindes demaund.
Had not his Acts beene Regiſtred,
By Memorie in worthy Write,
And Name by *Fame* forth queriſtred,
Maugre Oblivions miſtie ſpite.
Stout *Hectors* valour who could tell?
Who could rehearſe *Viſſes* skill?
With thouſands, whoſe Exploits excell?
If not portrai'd by ſouereigne Quill?
How worthy prayſe are Writers then;
Whoſe workes ſhew to this vile-growne Age,
The worthy liues of Valiant men,
For Vertues Freedome layd in gage?
Then well deſerues he that reuiues
The Age-worne records of Renowne;
Contemning *Enuie*, that depriues
The well deſeru'd of Lawrell Crowne.
Thanke *Fowde*, thus offring at free coſt,
His Talent for our hearts delight,
And reckons not his labour laſt,
If it (with kindnes) we requite.

R. K.

THE HISTORIE OF MONTELION, KNIGHT of the Oracle.

CHAP. I.

How *Perſicles* was created King of *Aſſyria*, and travailed into *Perſia*, to the Marriage of his Siſter *Piera*, to the Emperours Sonne *Deloratus*. How he was enamoured of *Conſtantia*: and returned into *Aſſyria*.

AN ancient King named Pius, ruled the Land of Aſſyria in great peace: as well Fortunate by the loue of his Subiects, and other outward bleſſings, as with two faire children a Sonne and a Daughter, that after his death ſhould ſucceed in that Empire. And by reaſon Age was now ſo much growne vpon him, that he found himſelfe wearied, and vnable to exerciſe the care that belongeth to the gouernment of ſo mighty a Nation: alſo beholding in his Sonne, more then ordinary grauity, and ſo forward a minde to vertue, as that he might well commit a matter of ſuch waight to his care: he determined to giue himſelfe to reſt, which well agreed with his Age, and therefore cauſed all the Peeres of his Land to be aſſembled.

Which being effected, and all ſet in Parliament, the old King vttered his minde: which was, to eſtabliſh his Sonne Perſicles in the Kingdome. The Peeres before that, as well by common report, as of their owne experience, hauing perfect knowledge of his manifold vertues, gaue their generall conſents: And ſo Perſicles within few dayes was crowned King.

Pius hauing effected this according to his mind, yet could not be

at quiet vntill he had prouided a mariage for his daughter, beſitting her eſtate. To further which good intent, it fortuned that Deloratus Son and heyre to the King of Perſia, hearing of Pieraes beauty (for ſo was ſhe called) came into the Country of Aſſyria, and by long ſute, at laſt obtained her good will, and her fathers conſent: being aſſured to her in the preſence of moſt of the Peeres, but for that certaine conditions were to be ratified by the King his Father, the ſolemnization of the marriage was deferred vntil that was performed: and for that time ſhould not be long protracted, which Deloratus with earneſtneſſe haſtened. Perſicles with the conſent of his Father, accompanied his Siſter Piera into Perſia, attended by a number of gallant Knights, as well to ſee the conditions ratified, and the marriage performed, as alſo to doe Deloratus honour. After their departure, they within few dayes arriued in the Kingdome of Perſia, where Perſicles and Piera were moſt honourably entertained by the olde King Torſilus, and the conditions ratified.

The Solemnization of the marriage was deferred for certaine dayes, for that the King of Perſia determined to haue the ſame performed with great pompe, whether he inuited many of his Neighbouring Kings, as of Arabia, Natolia, and Theſſalia. The Knights of Perſia made preparation to attend the Bridegroome in great royalty.

Perſicles being in the Perſian Court, hearing what Gallants were likely to be at the wedding, prepared moſt rich Ornaments againſt that day, determining not to be the laſt in tryall of his valour at the Tilt. The prefixed day being come, the King of Arabia, Natolia, Theſſalia, and many other Princes of great Eſtate, with them were arriued, and the City was filled with ſuch a number of Knights and Gallants, that there was ſcarce roome therein to containe them. To recite euery particular of their entertaynements, greetings, riches, and what gallant Ladies were with them, would be ouer-tedious: but in briefe, there was ſuch royall entertainment as beſitted ſuch Perſonages, and ſuch a multitude of rare ſhewes, and fine deuices, as might euery way pleaſe a curious beholder.

The Marriage being paſt, the ſumptuous Banquets ended,

and

and the Estates set to behold the Tilt: The first that entered the Lists, was a Persian Duke, named Osimus, gallantly mounted and a man of goodly proportion: After whom, followed the rest of the Persian Knights, who were all Challengers against all strangers that came to make tryall of their Valour. Next came the adverse part, the foremost of which was Persicles, who appeared in Richnesse, according to the dignity of his place, being King of so mighty a Country as Assyria: whose sight led the beholders in admiration of his evident perfections. After whom followed Nonius Prince of Natolia, and after him a number of most gallant Knights, so richly adorned, as would have perswaded a cowardly miscreant to have become valiant: whose particular description I omit.

As Persicles was chiefe of the adverse part, and Duke Osimus of the Persians, so they two beganne the encounter, breaking of staves with exceeding valour: but Osimus entending to winne the chiefest honour, for that he was esteemed the best Knight in Persia, had provided staves of tough Wood, which would not start with an easie encounter: one of which he tooke, and ranne the fourth time at Persicles, who unprovided of such an unexpected assault was overturned: and his Steed tumbling, fell upon him, that with the fall he for a time remained without sence. The King of Persia and the rest, being exceedingly afraid that he was slaine, came running off the Scaffolds to take him up, carrying him forth of the Lists, to be unarmed: Amongst the rest, his sister Piera used her utterm ost diligence to recover him, with whom likewise, were a number of gallant Ladyes to assist her: but chiefly the Queene of Persia, and her youngest Daughter Constantia, as more regarding him, by reason he was Brother to Piera, and most of all lamented his ill ap.

Persicles finding himselfe somewhat recovered, at the first opening his eyes, fixt them on Constantia, which by reason hee was not fully revived, stood still fixt upon the first object, as it were with affectionate earnestnesse. which caused an exceeding blush to rise in her cheekes.

But now seeing such a number about him, he was amazed, & halfe ashamed of this foyle, sayd: I beseech you leave me to my selfe: and so

the reſt of the Turnament, for I haue no harme. With that he ſtarted vpon his feet, and fetching a deepe ſigh departed. They were all exceeding glad of his ſafety: and ſo leauing him to be attended by his owne Knights, they departed to the Scaffolds, and againe tooke their places to behold the reſt of the Turnament.

Perſicles was exceedingly vexed, that he had receiued ſuch a diſgrace, and in the preſence of ſuch an honorable aſſembly: moſt of all, for that he vnderſtood Oſimus intent: preſently buckled on one of his Knights Armors, and mounting himſelfe, entred the Liſts againe: by which time, the Tilt was almoſt ended, and the Perſian Knights bare away the prize; but Perſicles then vnknowne, ſtood ready at the Races end, for the next encounter: againſt whom a Perſian Knight ran, but ſo farre to his diſgrace, that he tumbled with his heeles vpwards. With that euery one began to wonder what he ſhould be, and the people gaue an exceeding ſhout: with that the other Perſian met with him, whoſe fortune was much like the former. For his Steed ſtumbling with the ſtrength of the Encounter, they both fell downe. A Knight of Perſia who that day had wonne great honor by his valor, ſeeing that, would needs be the next to meet him, thinking to reuenge his Countrymans diſgrace: but at the firſt race he could not performe it, for they paſt by without any other oddes, but breaking their ſtaues moſt gallantly. And running againe the Perſians Fortune was ſo bad, that he was ouerthrowne. By this time the day was ended, and the Iudges ready to depart: but Oſimus intreated that he might breake one ſtaffe with the ſtráger, which they granted. Whom Perſicles well knew, reſolutely determined to giue or take the foyle, both of them meeting with ſuch terror, that the Earth ſeemed to ſhake, and Oſimus (notwithſtanding all his ſtrength) was by Perſicles ouerthrowne, to ſaue his honor, and requite his diſcourteſie. With that the people gaue ſuch ſhouts, as made all the Pallace ring with the ſound. And Perſicles diſcouered himſelfe, which made euery one reioyce, and wonder at his valour.

Perſicles being vnarmed, accompanied the King of Perſia, Natolia, and the reſt, hauing that day wonne ſuch honour as made him more highly eſteemed: and comming to ſalute his ſiſter Piera, hee ſuddenly eſpyed Conſtantia: thinking he had before ſéne that ſweet countenance, but he could not remember where, which caſt him into

ſuch

ſuch a deepe ſtudy, that he almoſt forgat himſelfe. After he had ſaluted the reſt he came to Conſtantia, to whom he ſayd. Faire Lady either I haue beheld your Beauty, and that ſweet countenance in ſome other Countrey, or in ſome viſion, for my mind perſwadeth me, I ſhould perfectly know you: for I am ſure this is not the firſt time I haue ſeene you, which maketh me thus bold to demand of whence you are, if it be not offenſiue vnto you. Sir (replyed Conſtantia) it may be, I am but an imperfect ſhadow of her you ſo perfectly remẽber; for vntill this day I neuer ſaw you, which maketh me ſuppoſe, you doe but take an occaſion of courſe to commend me, that deſerue no ſuch matter, neither ſhall you offend me: nor I deny to ſhew my Birth, being Daughter to the King of Perſia, but for many yeares brought vp in Arabia. Pardon my boldneſſe (quoth Perſicles) for I would not offend you, neither doe I thinke you a ſhadow, but a perfect ſubſtance, and not to reſemble any but your ſelfe: for there can be no Beauty that excelleth yours, which mine eyes before this time haue beheld: or elſe Nature it ſelfe hath imprinted in my hart an eſſentiall inſtinct of deuotion thereto, which perſwadeth me to this boldneſſe: therefore I humbly deſire you not to miſconceiue me, nor eſteeme me of ſo rude a diſpoſition, as to ſpeake otherwiſe then my heart thinketh: and to account of me as one that earneſtly deſireth to be better acquainted with you, and will indeauor to make you amends for any offence giuen, offering my ſelfe and all that is mine, to be at your diſpoſition: which ſaid, he left off further ſpeech, for he ſaw others attend to heare what he ſaid.

At night Conſtantia being in her priuate Chamber, called to remembrance Perſicles ſpeeches, which made her maruel why he ſhould ſay, he had before that ſeen her, which ſhe knew could not be: but remembring how earneſtly he beheld her that day, when he was ſcarce reuiued frõ his trance, ſhe thought that ſight might breed ſuch a perſwaſion in him, which was ſo indeed: withall, ſhe called to mind, his comelineſſe, valour, eſtate, and courteſie, which ſhe had before noted: all which remembrances made her ſo much forget all other thoughts that a great part of the night was vnawares ouerpaſt: & after ſhe had reuiued her ſenſes, ſhe felt ſuch an alteratiõ, as all that night ſhe could not reſt, delighting in nothing ſo much as to remember him. The like did Perſicles, for her Beauty and other outward

graces, had pierced ſo neare his heart, that he was enthralled to her Loue, and reſolued to winne it.

Earely the next morning he gat vp, ſeeking all occaſions to ſpeake to her againe, but he was diſappointed all the forenoone. For ſhe by reaſon of her little reſt in the night, kept her Chaber, and after dinner, accompanyed the Quæne her mother, and the other Ladyes whereby he was that day diſappointed. The next morning likewiſe he aroſe, ſtudying which way to come to her ſpæch, for his affection was ſo great, as no thought contented him but her remembrance; but before he could bring to paſſe what he moſt deſired, there arriued Meſſengers from Aſſyria, certifying him that his Father was deceaſt, and that their ancient enemy the King of Armenia had entred his Land, and deſtroyed many of his Subjects, deſiring him in all haſte to returne: For in his abſence the Aſſyrians ſæmed like men without courage.

Perſicles hearing this vnexpected newes, was exceedingly aſtoniſht, both with deſire to ſaue his Country, and alſo to proſecute his Loue: the one perſwading him to ſtay, the other to haſten his departure: The one being as deare to him as his life, the other as deare, as both Life, Country, and all: for without obtaining that, hæ thought he could not liue, being ſo much perplexed that he could not reſolue what to doe: at laſt the ſpeciall regard of his Countrey ouercame his heart, & remued him with a manly courage to reuenge, that he Commanded all things to be prepared for his ſudden departure, and going to his Chamber, he got Pen and Inke, and wrote as followeth.

TO THE MOST FAIREST *Conſtantia.*

MOſt beloved *Conſtantia*, though my Countries preſervation, occaſioneth my ſudden departure, yet my Loue to your perfections, importuneth me to ſolicite your gentle eares with theſe rude Lines. I cannot with colourable Phraſes ſhadow a perfect meaning, nor yet with painted Eloquence, decipher my true loue: but in the trueſt ſort, manifeſt my conſtant affection to your vertues, which vnleſſe you grace with ſome favor, will be my endleſſe torment. I have long deſired to make the ſame manifeſt vnto you,

but

but I was ſtill diſappointed, and my unexpected departure hath now ſhut me from your preſence, wherby I ſhall live in continuall care. Notwithſtanding, I humbly beſeech you in my unwilling abſence, to eſteeme me your faithfull and true devoted Servant, and one that hath vowed himſelfe for ever to bee yours: whoſe welfare conſiſteth in your curteſie, the hope wherof ſhall preſerve my life untill my returne, which my conſtant love will cauſe me to haſten: deſiring you, though I be abſent, not to forget me, nor for my little deſerts to reject me: but let me be ſo much bound to your vertues, as to conceive well of me: and to your courteſie, as to pitty me: ſo ſhall my ioyes be lengthened, my unhappy life is preſerued, and my good will and conſtant loyalty highly rewarded, So with ſorrow, I take my leave,

Yours inſeparably,
PERSICLES.

Hauing wrote this Letter, he found out his ſiſter Piera, to whom he ſaid as followeth Deare ſiſter, the ſorrowes that cauſe my departure, come ſo ſuddenly, as that I cānot ſtand long to confer with you: therefore for that I build vpon aſſurance of your loue, ſecrecy, & aſſiſtance, I will vnfold to you the ſecrets of my heart, and that which none but your ſelfe ſhould know. So it is that Conſtantias beauty hath bewitched mine eyes, & I remaine ſo much inthralled thereto, that vnleſſe ſhe pitty me, I am but caſt away. I deſire your aſſiſtance herein, whereby you may preſerue my life. I haue wrote this Letter vnto her, which I deſire you to deliuer: and withal to vſe ſuch ſpeeches on my behalfe, as ſhall ſeeme beſt to your wiſedome: for I aſſure you, vnleſſe at my returne, which ſhall be ſhortly, I find her fauourable, my ſorrowes will ſhorten my dayes. Then good ſiſter ſhew your loue to me in this, and in my abſence giue her knowledge of my loyalty, which ſhall make me euerlaſtingly thankfull vnto you. Piera promiſed her vtmoſt aſſiſtance, and ſo with many teares of her ſide, they parted.

The newes of his departure was ſoone ſpred through the whole Court, and likewiſe came to Conſtantias hearing, who left her chāber, and gat into her mothers company, where ſhe thought to haue a ſight

ſight of him, which ſome ſmall ſparks of Loue that were kindled in her tender breaſt, procured her vnto. After all farewels were paſt, he eſpied her in the company of other Ladies, to whom he came, and only amongſt the reſt of them all, took his leaue of her with a ſweet kiſſe, breathing forth a bitter ſigh at the parting, which euery one noted: Some taking the ſame in diſdaine, and others marueiling that he regarded her aboue them all. Which made the blood riſe in Conſtantiaes cheekes, and the water ſwell in her eyes.

CHAP. II.

How *Helyon* Prince of *Arabia*, croſt the loue betweene *Perſicles* and *Conſtantia*. Of a battell fought betweene *Perſicles*, and the King of *Armenia*. And how diſguiſing himſelfe, he trauelled into *Perſia*, and how he diſcouered himſelfe to *Conſtantia*.

HIs departure cauſed a ſadneſſe throughout the Court, for indeed he was the beauty thereof, ſo excellent was his perſon, and ſo commendable his qualities. Piera betaking her ſelfe to her Chamber, lamented his abſence with priuate teares, vntill Delorarus found her out, and cauſed her with his comfortable ſpeeches, to giue ouer that griefe. The King of Natolia likewiſe with moſt of the Nobles and Knights that came to the Solemnization of the Wedding were departed, except Prince Helyon, ſonne to the King of Arabia. The occaſion of whoſe ſtay, was to craue Conſtantia in marriage, aſſuring himſelfe of her Loue, by reaſon of the familiarity that was betwixt them in her fathers Court: which indeed by her former kindneſſe he might be in ſome aſſurance of, though not by any promiſe ſhe had made him: which motion he made to the King of Perſia, who eſteeming ſo honourably of him regarding his Birth, and moſt of all, deſiring to be allyed to the Arabian King, gaue his conſent, which was fully concluded and agreed vpon, before it came to Conſtantiaes knowledge.

Prince Helyon hauing his aſſurance, with a merry hart ſought out Conſtantia, entending to reueale the ſame to her: and according to

to his wonted kinde of Familiaritie, began to greete her: In whom he found such an alteration, that he wondred thereat, saying: My deare Constantia, this vnexpected vnkindnesse in you, whom I esteeme as my most chosen Friend, maketh me admire, whereas I had thought to haue enioyed your loue without interruption. Vpon confidence of your courtesie, I haue moued your Fathers consent to our Marriage, who hath yelded thereto: then I beseech you, darken not both your and my ioyes, with these spittie cloudes of care, which will fill my heart with sorrow: but rather increase your kindnes, to both mine and your comfort. Constantia's countenance bewrayed the angry motions of her hart, incensed by his speeches, that we had much adoe to withhold her eyes from shedding teares: yet with a colour as red as Scarlet, she gaue him this answer. Prince Helyon, if that be true which you tell me, I cannot chuse but wonder at your follie, that would without assurance of my Loue, make such a motion: thinke you my affections are to be limitted according to your disposition? For my part, I disclayme such interest, and renounce such Affection: for I neuer intended any such matter, nor euer did you demand the same. Then my Lord be you satisfied for this, for I neuer yet did, nor will giue my consent.

Helion hearing her answere, was nipt on the head, being strooke with such griefe, that he could not tell what to say. But at last replied. Constantia, I confesse I haue done you wrong, in aduenturing so farre without your consent, but yet for that I haue not thereby either dishonoured your Name, or otherwise iniured you, I humbly craue pardon, desiring you to ratifie that which I haue by your former curtesies assured my selfe of: and let not my ouerboldnesse alienate any part of your good will, For you know my affections haue remained inuiolable constant many yeares: and I haue attended your liking with such fernencie, as you may be resolutely assured of my truth. Then I beseech you be not now displeased with me, but according to your wonted kindnesse, accept me into your fauour.

My Lord (replied she) I cannot deny but that your goodwill hath exceeded my deserts, for which I thanke you: and withall, that I haue alwaies esteemed you, which likewise I would haue done still: But now that opinion is altered, neither can I be induced to conceiue wel of him that would doe me such manifest iniury as you haue

done. Therfore I pray be contented with that fauor you haue had, for my affections are otherwiſe employed, and my heart vtterly diſagreeing to the motion you haue made. With that ſhe eſpied Piera in the Garden comming towards her, to whom ſhe went down, ſaluting her moſt kindely. Piera thought now to haue delinered her Perſicles Letter, but by reaſon that there were diuers in their companie, ſhe could not then performe it. After a while they left eache other. Piera returning to her Chamber, and Conſtantia into a ſecret place of the Garden where ſhe vttered theſe meditations. What contrarious diſquiets are theſe poſſeſſe the center of my heart? what inconueniences am I like to run into? and how ſhal I auoyd blame for the one, and reape content by the other? How vnkindly hath Prince Helion vſed me, to make this motion to my Father, whoſe diſpoſition muſt not be croſt, without hazzard of much diſquiet? My kindneſſe to him, hath cauſed his ouer-fond conceit of himſelfe, and brought mée into much trouble: I could haue loued him before I came to the ſight of Perſicles, whoſe guifts are ſo far exceeding his, that whereas my heart loued him, the thought of that Loue is now moſt grieuous. Wherein I may doe my ſelfe great wrong: for in hope of his affection, I refuſe Helions loue, which may deprriue me of both, purchaſe my Fathers heauy diſpleaſure, and my own perpetuall diſcontent. Reuoluing a Chaos of theſe, and ſuch like confuſed cogitations, which ouercame her ſences with their ambiguity, in a heauy and diſcontented vaine ſhe went to her Chamber, thinking there to conſider of euery particular at ẏ full: where ſhe found Piera all alone, ſtaying her comming in, who ſoone eſpied that Conſtantia had wept, whereupon ſhe tooke occaſion to ſay as followeth. My beloued Siſter, I am ſorry to ſee you in this heauy and ſadde vaine, alwayes finding you either ſad or weeping, which maketh me wonder; and deſirous to know the cauſe, as one willing in any ſort to counſell you, & comfort you with my vttermoſt aſſiſtance, I haue of purpoſe entred your Chamber, to haue ſome conferẽce with you in priuate, being a Meſſenger ſent to you by my Brother Perſicles, who I know loueth you dearely: who by me humbly commendeth himſelfe vnto you, being ſorry that his ſudden departure was ſuch, that he could not before his going doe you that ſeruice you deſerue, and he deſired. Withall he deſired me to deliuer you this Letter, which he

left

left behinde, to testifie the depth of his affection: which at my request vouchsafe to read, & withall credit: for I know his honourable heart endureth much care by his absence. Constantia without making reply receiued the letter, and read the same: which when she had done, she said: Deare Sister, I thanke you for taking this paines to come to me, and not rather to haue sent for me, that rest at your command. And also I thank that worthy King Persicles, that he will vouchsafe me such vndeserued fauour, as to esteeme well of my vnworthinesse, to whom I am bound in all honorable respect: but how vnfit I am to entertaine loue, your selfe would judge, if you knew my estate, which vpon assurance of your secrecy I will vnfold. Prince Helion of Arabia, vain. presuming he was assured of my fauour, hath asked my Fathers consent, to a marriage twixt him & me, which he hath granted vnto: which ỳ heauens can testifie is vtterly disagreeing to my heart, and altogether without my Consent, which he shall neuer attaine, what danger soeuer I incurre thereby. Which if Persicles should vnderstand, would soone alter his minde: Therefore it is best for his quiet not to place his affections on me so vnworthy, but let me alone to endure the affliction that is likely to ensue.

I know (qd. Pyera) my Brothers Loue is so constant, that nothing can alter the same. which he related to me at large: which marketh me testifie the assurance therof. Which would you but accept of, or giue me some comfortable hope in his absence, I should thinke my selfe bound to you for euer, and to haue done him an exceeding pleasure: for nothing but the happy tidings of your fauour, can comfort him. The King of Persia will not compell you to marry Helyon, when he vnderstandeth that you are otherwise bent, for that were cruelty. And I thinke Helion himselfe beareth not so vnhonourable a minde, as to seeke your Loue by constraint, for that were inhumanity. But would you yeeld to like of my Brothers loue that is euery way as good as the Prince of Arabia, the knowledge thereof would soone make him return to aske your fathers consent, which may peraduenture stand as wel affected to him as to Prince Helio. Ay me qd. Constantia sister I need not doubt to reueale my greatest secrets to you that I know for Persicles sake wil conceale them, I cõfesse without further circumstances, that I loue that worthy King Persicles. which is ỳ cause of these disquiets: neither did my fancy euer yeeld ỳ least conceit

conceit of liking to Helyons loue, which I toke to be rather grounded vpon common familiarity, then pretence of Marriage. Therefore now that you are aſſured of that which you requeſt, I beſæch you not to conceiue amiſſe of my raſh confeſſion, nor eſteeme my loue light, becauſe of ſo ſhort continuance, for it ſhalbe immoueable: but rather comfort my poore diſquieted hart, with your counſel how to auoyde theſe inconueniences. And if that worthy King be ſo affected towards me, as your ſpæches and his Letter here affirmeth, I would wiſh his returne might be ſpædy: otherwiſe my ſorrowes will be endleſſe. For I know my Fathers nature to bæ ſuch, that whatſoeuer he will haue, muſt be performed, though equity would perſwade the contrary.

Grieue not ſo much (quoth Piera,) with premeditated conceit of feare, which peraduenture ſhal neuer come to paſſe: I will preſently ſend meſſengers vnto my Brother, which ſhall carry ſuch newes as will comfort his heart, and cauſe ſpædy returne: in the meane time I will make Deloratus acquainted with Helions practiſe, not Perſicles Loue, who ſhall perſwade the King all that may be, not to conſent to marry you againſt your minde. Be then of good comfort, and in aſſurance of Perſicles Loyalty let no feare diſquiet your ſences, or impaire your health: For things now at the worſt may haue a good end. Theſe ſpæches ended they parted.

All this while Prince Helion was meditating how to haſten the Marriage, but moſt of all to find the cauſe of Conſtantias diſcontent: which he thought was aggrauated againſt him, by ſome good conceit ſhee had lately entertained of ſome other then himſelfe, which made him proſecute the ſame with more feruency: and dealt ſo effectually with the King, that he ſwore Conſtantia ſhould be ruled by him. And thereupon, the next day ſent for her, to whom he ſaid.

Daughter, I thinke it is not vnknowne to you that I haue promiſed you in Marriage to Prince Helion; one that is euery way worthy to match with you, both for Nobleneſſe of Birth, vertuous qualities, and comelines of perſon. Withall, I am giuen to vnderſtand, that you like not our choice, nor eſteeme our command: which if you neglect, you ſhall not only diſpleaſe mee, but alſo loſe my fauor for euer. For as you are mine, I purpoſe to diſpoſe of you, but if you refuſe my counſell, refuſe me too; for I will not regard a diſobedient

childe.

childe. The manifold reasons I could alleadge, that perswade me to the confirmation of this Contract, are of such waight, as I might seeme careleſſe of your welfare, and your ſelf enuious of your owne good, to deny them: therefore let me know your anſwer.

Conſtantia well knew that if ſhee denyed, he would be offended; and his froward Nature to be ſo much diſpoſed to wrath, that before ſhe could ſpeake ſhe ſhooke with feare: yet reſolution to hazard the worſt, humbling herſelfe vpon her knee, ſhe made this anſwere. My reuerend duty to you (moſt louing Father) perſwadeth my conſent to fulfill your command, though my Loue bindeth me to the contrarie: that I ſtand perplext twixt two extreames: the one, fearing to offend you, the other to procure my euerlaſting diſcontent: for in refuſing to doe according to your will, I ſhall incurre your indignation, and in performing the ſame, my euerlaſting ſorrow. For as yet my heart could neuer yeeld to loue that worthy Prince, who farre too worthy to be matcht with me. Moſt humbly beſeeching you to conſider, that inforced Loue neuer bringeth content, but diſquiet, which with Helion, will be my portion: Therefore I beſeech you reuoke your determination.

Is it euen ſo (quoth he) ſhall my commaund be countermaild by your peeuiſh conceit? is this the regard you giue to my good will? Are you wiſer then I? or are you willing to diſpleaſe me? Shall my will ſtand at your direction? is this the duty you owe to your Father? or feare you no more to offend me? Haue I ſo carefully brought you vp, and tenderly regarded you for this? Henceforth neuer come in my ſight, for I will not eſteem thee as a Child, but as a baſtard: and withall I vow that if thou doſt not yeeld to marry him, vſe him kindly, and apply thy denotions to his liking, I will vſe thee in ſuch ſort, that all Perſia ſhall lament thy caſe. Hauing giuen her this bitter reproofe, he departed: leauing her weeping the fountaines of her precious eyes out, wringing her hands, & like one in a dead trance, ouercome with griefe, caſt vpon the Earth. The firſt that entred the roome was Helyon, who ſeeing her in that agony, tooke her by the hand to haue raiſed her from ỹ earth, but ſhe refuſing his helpe, vttered theſe ſpeeches. Vntill this time I alwaies eſteemed honorably of you: but now my good opinion is altered, for that you onely ſeek my torment: my Father hath giuen me charge to marry with

you, which I muſt againſt my heart fulfill: but be aſſured neuer to poſſeſſe my Loue, for that I haue bequeathed an other: onely my outward parts may be yours, but my inward affections ſhall continually eſteeme you as the onely occaſioner of my endleſſe miſeries. With that ſhe roſe vp from the ground, giuing him neither better words, nor other kinde behauiour, but left him ſtanding ſtill as one aſtoniſht.

Piera made Conſtantia's eſtate knowne to Deloratus, who ſo farre as he durſt, perſwaded her Father not to conſtraine her to marry the Prince: but ſuch wilfulneſſe poſſeſt him, that the more they intreated him the more contrarious he was, and therefore appointed the day for the Marriage to be within two monthes. And in the meane time doubting the King of Arabiaes conſent, he ſent his Embaſſadours to that effect.

Piera hearing this, preſently ſent meſſengers into Aſſiria, to certifie Perſicles of all that had happened: and withall, wrote a Letter, which contained the whole ſummes of Conſtantia's conſent to his Loue. Who with all diligence haſted vntill they arriued there: being preſently conducted into his preſence: After he had moſt kindely imbraced them, he demanded how Piera did, and what meſſage they brought from her: whe reupon they deliuered him the Letters they had brought: which when he had read, commanding his Knights to giue the Meſſengers honourable entertainement, he departed to his Tent, one way ſo much comforted, and an other way ſo much troubled, that he ſate him downe in a deepe ſtudy, not yet knowing what to reſolue vpon.

When he had a long ſpace meditated with what contrarieties his Fortunes were croſt, the daunger his Country was in, how likely he was to loſe Conſtantia, and how difficult to attempt her poſſeſſion, and many other, at laſt he thought his Life would be nothing without her Loue: and therefore he fully reſolued to hazard the ſame to attaine it: but ſo impoſſible it ſeemed which way to accompliſh the ſame: For firſt the Armenians warre hazarded his Kingdome, whom he could not ſuddenly expell: Next to attempt to winne her by force, that could not be, for the Perſian was too mighty: & laſtly, delay might breed a greater miſchiefe then all the reſt: that calling vnto him two of his chiefeſt Nobles, the one named Parenus, a wiſe

Coun-

Counsellour, the other Thureus a Noble Warriour, he vttered his minde to them, saying: I haue sent for you, as the men that I most respect and trust: being determined to commit to your charge the gouernement of my Kingdome, for that waighty busines, and such as concerns my euerlasting welfare, must for a season withdraw mee: and for that I am fully assured of your Loyalty, I will vse no exhortations, to perswade you thereto, but to order the same in this sort. Thureus resembling me much, both in proportion and countenance, shall in my absence possesse my roome, whom the people will assuredly take to be my selfe, and so gouerne them with more ease. And you Parenus, by your wisedome order all things according thereto: Thus you know my minde: which I doe not doubt, but you will accomplish in euery respect according to my desire. They first intreated him, not to depart, but when they saw nothing could preuaile, they swore that they would faithfully execute what he had giuen them in charge. Hee likewise telling them that he would depart within three dayes, which he deferred so long, by reason that the second day the Armies of the Assyrians and Armenians should meete. Hauing ended his conference with them, he returned to the Messengers that came from Persia, giuing Letters to Piera, which gaue her knowledge that he would be there within few dayes.

The prefixed day for the Battell was now come, and both the Armies met, betwixt whom began so hot & deadly a Fight, that many thousands on both parts lost their liues, and the Armenians greedy of their Enemies ouerthrow, followed them so eagerly, that they began to sound retrait. Persicles seeing that, left the place of his Gouernment, and with his Lance ready couched, met an Armenian Duke so full, that he pierced the same through his body, then drawing his sword, with the same he slew the next, & after him dismembred others: that within a while his valour made such a slaughter amongst them, that they auoyded the place of his Fight, and thought themselues best that were furthest of him. Thus valorously did he pursue them, vntill he was vnawares in the midst of their Army: which aduantage the King of Armenia espyed, thinking Persicles life within his power, ran at him with a lance pointed with steele, but it miss him: and Persicles seeing him, met him so full with the pommel of his sword against his breast, that had not his Steed yeelded, he had broken his

backe:

backe; with that the Armenians assailed him round about, with such vnequall odds, being a multitude to one, that sometimes they were thrust so neere vpon him by the throng, that swayed him vp and downe: Those that came next him dyed by his sword, their dead trunkes falling downe betwixt his Steeds legges, which made him spring about with such furie, that he soone made them giue way. In the meane time, while the most part of the Battell were bent to destroy him, the Assyrians had made such a slaughter amongst the outwings of the Army, that most of them were slaine, and the rest fled. Thrureus fearing Persicles harme, for that he mist him with his Followers, soone found him out, and by that meanes rescued him from amongst the multitude: who by this time had vnhorst him, and he was constrained to fight on foote, being scarce able to withold himselfe from stumbling vpon the dead carkasses of those himselfe had slaine. Thrureus soone got him remounted, and then both of them pursued their enemies so fiercely, that they beganne to flie; and had not the day beene ended, they had beene all destroyed: which caused Persicles to sound retraite, and betake him to his Tent, hauing that day done such deeds of Armes, as made both his owne subiects and the Armenians admire him.

Early the next morning, word was brought him, his Enemies were all fled, and not any of them to be found in the Campe, hauing left all there Riches behinde them, being glad they had escaped aliue: which reioyced Persicles to heare, for that they should bee no hinderance to his iourney, commanding his Souldiers to take the spoyle, and to bury the dead: and for that he had receiued neuer a mortall wound, hee determined the next day to depart, which he acquainted Parenus and Thrureus withall, requesting them (if it were possible) not to discouer his absence vntill his returne.

Hauing ordered euery thing according to his mind, the next morning he departed, attiring himselfe like a Palmer; with his staffe in his hand, which disguise shadowed him from knowledge, that he past his owne Court Gates, vndiscried: which assured him, that if his owne subiects and seruants knew him not, much lesse would strangers, that he passed without feare of being discouered. In this sort did he trauell, thinking it no penance to take paines to finde out his Loue, vntill he arriued in Persia, yet not knowing which way to accomplish

compliſh his intent, or to come to ſpeech, either of Piera or Conſtantia, for that he was a ſtranger, being denyed to enter the Court-gates, where he ſtayed attending his good Fortune, ſome three dayes: but as farre from hope then, as at his firſt comming: that he was ſo much tormented in his thoughts, that he could not tell what to doe. The next day he heard that the King ſhould goe forth on Hunting, which made him preſently ſuppoſe (for that the Parke was ſo neere the Court) the Ladies likewiſe would ſee the Paſtime, hoping by ſome odde meanes or other, to give one of them knowledge of his arriuall, That he wrote a Letter, the contents whereof were theſe.

To PIERA, *or* CONSTANTIA.

THeſe I write to eyther of you: My Fortunes being doubtfull to whether I ſhould deliver this. The Palmer that delivered this Letter is *Perſicles*, that deſireth to ſpeake with one of you, for he ſayth, you both are as deare to him as his owne Soule. Attending an happy houre, I end.

Yours PERSICLES.

The next day, according to his hopes, the King and Queene, Dela, and Piera, Helyon and Conſtantia, and many other, came forth, whom Perſicles ſoone eſpyed: and well noting Conſtantiaes countenance, perceiued the ſame ſo darkened, as if ſhe had beene fully poſſeſt with diſcontent. Who comming neere him (for he ſtood ſo as they muſt paſſe by him) caſting her eyes upon him, beheld him ſo earneſtly, that ſhe almoſt forgate her ſelfe, feeling her heart to throb with an vnwonted motion, that ſhe let fall her rich Scarffe, moſt curiouſly imbroydred, which occaſion Perſicles ſoone eſpyed, as awayting ſuch an opportunity, tooke vp the Scarffe and with great reuerence gaue it her, conueying the Letter therein ſo cloſely, that ſhe ſoone eſpyed the ſame: wherewith her heart began to pant, and viewing the ſuperſcription, found it directed to her, as Piera: that cloſely ſhe put the ſame in her boſome, leſt Helyon or any elſe ſhould eſpie it, vntill ſhe could find opportunity to reade it. By this time, the game was rowſed, and all but ſhe alone followed the paſtime with earneſtneſſe: which ſhe beholding withdrew her ſelfe with one of her

Ladyes, and read the Letter through, which affected her heart with ſuch joy and feare, that ſometimes her heart leapt with the one, and her Eyes ſtood ready to ouerflow with teares with the other. Preſently following the company vntill ſhe ouertooke Piera, to whom ſhe ſaid: Siſter, did you not behold the Palmer that ſtood in the way, as we came by the Pallace Wall? Yes (quoth ſhe) And doe you not know him, ſaid Conſtantia? It is your Brother Perſicles.

With that Piera ſmiled, ſaying: How can that be: or what maketh you thinke ſo? With that ſhe pull'd out the Letter, and bad her read it: Which when ſhe had done, ſhe ſayd: Conſtantia, he is worthy to be kindly vſed, hauing trauailed ſo farre on foot to ſee vs. Yea (quoth Conſtantia) how may we come to ſpeake with him? Or how may we giue him that Welcome his Worthineſſe deſerueth? that for my vnworthy ſake, hath vndertaken to hazard his Royall perſon in trauell? Let me alone (quoth Piera) and the better to auoyd ſuſpition, vſe Helyon ſomewhat more kindly then heretofore you haue done, that his minde may be voyd of iealouſie: for I perceiue when you come in any place or company, he hath a diligent and vigilant eye ouer you.

And calling vnto her a Damzell named Dela, one that was priuy to all her ſecret Counſels, to whom ſhe ſayd: Goe thy way and finde out the Palmer that thou ſaweſt as we came, for it is Perſicles, conduct him into my Chamber, where let him ſtay vntill my returne: and if any aske thee what he is, tell them he is of Aſſyria, and bringeth me newes from the Knight my Brother. Dela haſted, and ſoone found him out, Reuerently ſaluting him, and calling him by his name: which made him maruell that ſhe knew him, vntill ſhe deliuered her Meſſage, which he was ready to fulfill, as the thing he aboue all things deſired. And hauing brought him into the Court, which ſhe did without contradiction, ſhe returned to certifie her Miſtreſſe thereof. Whom ſhe met with Conſtantia, and ſome few before the reſt, returning to the Court, being both deſirous to ſee Perſicles. Who now entring the Pallace, were ſoone eſpyed of him, which affected his heart with ſuch content, as it ſeemed to reuiue his ſences.

Conſtantia likewiſe was poſſeſt with ſuch contrarious paſſions, ſometimes of Feare, joy, baſhfulneſſe, deſire, and meeke loue, that her

her heart ſeemed to diſſolue: and all the Arteries of her body wrought with internall and ſtrange motions. By this time they were aſcended the Layres, and Periſcles ready to meet them, who firſt ſaluted Piera, as reſeruing the beſt for the laſt: which he performed ſo ſuperficially, in reſpect of the behauiour he vſed to Conſtantia, whoſe modeſty made her bluſh: whileſt he bereft her of a ſweet kiſſe: who with as mild a countenance as if modeſty her ſelfe had beene there, bade him Welcome.

Moſt diuine Lady (quoth he) I cannot expreſſe my thankfulneſſe by outward meanes, for that my heart both wiſheth and intendeth more good to you, then my tongue can vtter: being ſo farre bound vnto you in (reſpect of my ſlender and ſmall deſerts) for your eſteeming well of me, that I ſhall neuer be able to diſcharge the debt. And though you haue little cauſe by reaſon of the ſmall proofe you haue of my Fidelity, to yeild me Loue, yet if my faithfull vow may ſatiſfie you, and my plighted promiſe of perpetuall conſtancie aſſure you, you ſhall finde me both conſtant in Loue to you, Faithfull, to deale Honourably with you, and Loyall, not to doe any thing that ſhall be diſagreeable to your Will.

My Lord (ſaid Conſtantia) in full aſſurance of your good meaning my heart willingly affecting you more then any, without further delay, I yeild my ſelfe to your diſpoſition: deſiring you not to miſconceiue me. And though I am too vnworthy ſuch account as you make of mee, my poſſeſſion being lincked to ſo many Inconueniences, yet ſince your deſire is to haue it ſo, I am ready wholly to be ruled and gouerned and ruled according to your directions.

Piera then ſaid Let further conference for this time ceaſe, becauſe I heare of the Kings returne: and for this Night I will prouide for my Brothers ſecurity, with whom I will conferre about this buſineſſe, vntill you may conueniently meet againe. This ſayd, Periſcles tooke his leaue of Conſtantia, with many ceremonious Farewels, as each part interchanging their hearts, ſuch perfect Loue was eſtablicht betwixt them. He to a ſecret Chamber to meditate. Piera, to accompany her Husband. And Conſtantia, with an outwardly merry, though inwardly heauy heart, to Welcome Helyon.

CHAP. III.

How *Conſtantia* diſguiſed her ſelfe, and departed the Emperours Court with *Perſicles*.

Within this place, ſtayed Perſicles ſo long without meanes how to accompliſh his deſire, which was to conuey away Conſtantia, that the preſixed day for the performance of the Marriage approached, which driue them to their vttermoſt ſhifts, knowing that now or neuer it was to be done.

Conſtantia comming to Pieraes Chamber, with a heauy heart and watry eyes, demanded whether they had yet determined how ſhe ſhould eſcape: But hearing them make no anſwer, ſayd thus: (My Lord) ſince the feare you haue I ſhould be diſcouered, and ſo diſhonoured, maketh you vnwilling to haue me hazard my ſelfe, the time of my pretended Wedding now drawing nigh, which I moſt abhorre, becauſe I loue none but your ſelfe: Procure but for your ſafe departure out of the Court, without being diſcouered, and ſtay for me in the Euening, vnder the Myrtle-tree, by the Pallace wall, and thither I will aſſuredly come to you: but by what meanes, as yet I know not.

Perſicles was glad to heare her ſpeeches, but he was much troubled in mind that his miſfortune was ſuch, that he could not carry her thence, without ſhe her ſelfe ſhould hazard her eſcape alone, but ſeeing her forwardneſſe, which was an infallible token of her conſtancie, with many thanks and kind deeds, both their happy meeting againe, they parted: both with carefull hearts, and outward ſhewes of ſorrow, as would haue made the hardeſt heart of any remorſeleſſe beholder relent.

Perſicles ſoone departed, and without diſturbance: for in that habit he was without controll, and ſoone got to the Myrtle-tree, where vnder he ſate him downe, vttering many hearty Inuocations for his Loues fortunate eſcape: thinking that ſhe alone ſhould endure

this

this hazzard, but whatsoeuer extremity should follow, should bee borne by him. Constantia being in her Chamber with Dela, many thoughts possest her fancies, and many Deuises were soone inuented, and as soone out of content, that many she bethought her of, but none of them seemed currant. At last, leaning out of her Window, she espyed a Country-damzell enter the outer Court of the Pallace, with a Basket on her arme, wherein were Grapes, which she came of purpose to present vnto Constantia, for their sweetnesse: being a gift worthy acceptation. The Porter knowing her minde, sent her to the Princesse Chamber with a Gentleman. Constantia seeing that she came to her, caused her to come in, receiuing her present most gratiously: the Gentleman being departed, Dela by Constantiaes appointment, led the Maiden into a secret chamber, telling her, that it was her Mistresse pleasure, so much to grace her, that she should attend on her, and not returne to her Fathers house: the damzell being glad of that preferment, gaue her many thankes. Dela then caused her to put off her owne Apparell, and put on other that was Constantiaes. Which done, she left her and carried her homely weeds to Constantia, which she presently put on: disrobing her selfe of her rich ornaments, casting aside all other care, but only to attaine her Loue. And the Euening being now come, the happy time of her euerlasting weale or woe, she tooke the damzels Basket on her arme, and first with many farewels to Dela, commendations to Piera, and hearty sighes to leaue her Parents, not knowing what misfortunes might befall her with the water standing in her eyes, wholly to her vttermost power she returned, she went downe the Stayres, and from thence into the Court, behauing her selfe so decently, that none that met her had any thought, but that she had beene a perfect Damzell: and so she past vntill she came to the Porter, who knowing of her comming in, denyed not to let her out. Constantia hauing past thus far without escape, thought not to be long in going to the appointed place, but feare and hope hastening her steps, she sometimes ranne, and sometimes went: and then againe looking behind her, as if some had pursued her, ran vntill she gate a sight of the tree, where vnder likewise she espyed her Loue, who before that beheld her, but in that habite knew her not. To whom she approacht so nigh, that he noting her well, knew her, and with that embraced her

in his armes, ſaying: My deareſt Loue, a thouſand times Welcome, and more deſired of me, then all the riches of the World: for euer ſhall this day be bleſt, and the houre of this our happy meeting, accounted Fortunate: Let all that weare this habit be happy, and enjoy their moſt deſired content: and let this tree whereſoeuer growing, be eſtéemed aboue many others: For that it was the appointed place of our méeting. Let the Euening be the moſt pleaſant time of the day for Louers méetings: and let all thoſe be Fortunate in their méetings, whoſe hearts harbour conſtant Loue. My deare (quoth he) I cannot expreſſe the ioy my heart conceiueth at your preſence, being ſorry that you are thus driuen to hazard your Perſon for my ſake: being likewiſe as ſorry that I haue no place of ſecurity to carry you vnto, for in this place we muſt not ſtay long, therefore let vs depart the neareſt way towards Aſſyria, & Fortune that hath ſhewed her ſelfe ſo gentle, may fauour vs with ſome more happy ſucceſſe.

My Lord (qd. Conſtantia) now that I haue attained your preſence, I haue found the Harbor I expected, where my heart ſhall reſt, what hereafter you ſhall intend, I will be as well contented with as your ſelfe: therefore direct your ſteps which way ſoeuer you will, I will beare you company. Perſicles heart was glad to heare her ſo chéerefull, that folding his Arme in hers, the Night being now approached, they walked along: ſhe by the way diſcourſing the manner of her eſcape: To relate the conference betweene them, were tedious: but the moſt part of the night, they continued trauelling ſo faſt, as Conſtantiaes fæble legges could carry her: who though not accuſtomed to ſuch labour, yet endured the ſame ſo chærefully, as it had béene a wonder to behold: but at laſt arriuing into a ſolitary place, where ſeldome any frequented but Shepheards. The Night being farre ſpent, and Conſtantia wearie, they ſeated themſelues downe vpon a banke, and their minds being now ſomewhat eaſed of cares, their bodyes wearied with trauell, and the place voyd of diſturbance: After ſome delightfull conference, Conſtantia ſlept, and within a while Perſicles did the like: not awaking vntill the Sunnes bright beames glimmering vpon them, awakened them. Perſicles heart now begunne to be troubled, where to get Food for Conſtantia, which he was out of hope to attaine in thoſe ſolitary walkes, and riſing vp to view the place well, and which way next

to

to trauell, he eſpyed a Shepheards Cottage hard by, to which he with Conſtantia went, knocking at the doore, when preſently the Shepheards Wife came forth, who eſpying ſuch vnlooked for Gheſts, ſtarted backe, ſaying; What would you haue?

Mother (ſaid Perſicles) my Wife and I (for ſo he thought beſt to name her, to auoid ſuſpect) trauailing toward Aſſyria, by misfortune yeſternight loſt our way, and haue wandred vp and downe all this night, that we are both weary, eſpecially my Wife, that hath not beene vſed to ſuch vnreſt: our deſire is to reſt our ſelues, and get vs food (if it may be) in this place: Which kindneſſe, if you will afford vs, we will both pay for our charge we put you to, and withall reſt thankfull.

The Shepheardeſſe noting them well, thought them other then their habit declared: with whom his kinde Words and their countenances ſo much preuayled, that ſhe deſired them to come in, telling them, that her houſe reſted wholly at their diſpoſition. So they both entred, and willingly ſate them downe to reſt themſelues: but Perſicles aſking the old woman what meate ſhe had, ſhe told him ſhe had none at all: but if it pleaſed him, ſhe would be ready to fetch any thing he ſhould ſend for, at a Village hard by.

Whereupon the old Woman went forth to buy meat, leauing them in the houſe alone: In whoſe abſence Perſicles deſired Conſtantia not to be offended with him for ſaying ſhe was his Wife; For (quoth he) ſhould I name you my ſiſter, or otherwiſe, it might breed in them ſome ſuſpition. Withall, they hearing of your eſcape, which may by ſome meanes or other come to their knowledge, will the ſooner ſuſpect you: but vnder that name, ſhall you be voyd of the leaſt knowledge.

Conſtantia was contented to be ruled by him in any thing, whoſe heart would now haue conceited the height of content, had not feare to be diſcloſed darkened the ſame. In which place we will leaue them, to ſpeake of Helyon.

CHAP. IIII.

Of a merry Ieſt that befell *Helyon* Prince of *Arabia*.

COnſtantia being gone downe the ſtayres, Dela as ſoone left the Countrey-Mayden, to tell Piera what was done, and to aske her counſell what to doe: who hearing all, at laſt had her returne to the Damoſell, and carry her meate for her ſupper, but ſo cloſely as none might ſee her goe out and in: which Dela performed, and telling her where ſhe ſhould lye, ſo left her: altering her Garments and Attyres in ſuch ſort, that the Mayden ſeeing her, ſhould not know her. The Mayden being alone, was ſome tempted to taſte thoſe dainty meates, for that ſhe was very hungry, thinking her ſelfe moſt happy to be ſo exalted, daintily fed, and ſeeing her ſelfe Lord, her belly being full, and being not vſed at home to ſit vp late, drawing the curtaines cloſe about her, went to Bed, where ſhe had no ſooner laid, but ſhe fell faſt aſleepe.

Helyon all that euening, marrelling he could not ſee Conſtantia, and withall, not ſeeing Piera, was ſatisfied, thinking they had beene together, When ſupper was ended, he determined to ſee her, and therefore went to Pieraes Chamber, thinking to find her there, who told him, that ſhe was not there this afternoone. Then haſtening thence, he went to Conſtantiaes Lodging, finding the Doore ſhut, which being but latcht, he opened, and ſo ſoftly as he could, ſhut the doore againe: with eaſie pace, and ſtealing ſteppes, paſſing through the firſt roome, into the next, where he ſaw a light burning through the hangings, which he ſoftly lifted aſide, and looking into the chamber, ſaw no body ſtirring, but the curtaines drawne, and Conſtantiaes Apparell lying not far off and drawing nigh the Bed perceiued that ſhe was faſt aſleepe: that ſtanding by the Bed, as loath to awake her, and yet vnwillingly to leaue her, he ſilently vttered theſe meditations. Sweet Fortune hath appointed this happy houre, in fauour of my true loue that haue with conſtancy long attended my Loue, but neuer was graced with any title of her fauour: which opportunity if I ouer-ſlip, it may be I ſhall neuer attaine the like: if I ſhould

ſhould attempt to awake her, could ſhe be offended? if I ſhould further aske her conſent to poſſeſſe of her Loue: could ſhee take it in ill part? No, ſhe knoweth my Loue is loyall, and therefore will not be offended: but this feareth mee moſt, I neuer as yet had any fauour at her hand: ſhee for ought that I can ſee, regardeth me not; but in ſtead of my loue, repayeth me with ſorrow: yet in that I may be deceiued: Peraduenture ſhee hath vſed mee to make tryall of me, and alſo hath done this, to try whether I would like a Coward for feare of diſpleaſure, leaue the ſcaling of ſo ſweet a Fort: therefore be my fortune good or bad, I will hazard the worſt.

Then taking the Damzell by the hand, who ſlept ſo ſoundly, that he had much a doe to awaken her, he ſayd; Conſtantia, be not offended with me, it is your faithfull friend Helyon, that ſpeaketh to you: I hauing miſt you, thus boldly preſumed into your Chamber, which I found but ſleightly ſhut, and fearing that you had beene ſick, I am come to viſit you, deſiring you to graunt me this fauour, both to pardon my bolde intruſion, and let me ſtay to be your Guardiant: Which ſaid, very boldly he kiſt the Damzell twice or thrice. The Mayden hearing his ſpeeches, was ſo amazed, that ſhe could not ſpeake, reuoluing many thoughts in her doubtfull braine, what he ſhould be, and why the Princeſſe had appointed her to that place: but being vnacquainted with the faſhions of the Court, ſhe thought it was the cuſtome there (as ſhe had heard her Father report,) for euery one to haue a Louer, ſhe laid ſtill and ſaid nothing: Which animated Helyon to ſuch confidence, as that faſtning the Doore extinguiſhing the light, and putting off his Apparell, he leapt into the Bed: and firſt aſking pardon with many humble ſpeeches, repeating with what conſtancie he had ſerued her, and how faithfully he intended for euer to loue her, he folded her in his armes, vſing ſuch behauiour, as ſoone tempted the Damzell to yeeld, whome he bereft of her Virginitie, to both their contents: He on the one ſide thinking he had imbraced the faire Conſtantia, and ſhe ſuppoſing ſhe had gotten a rich and kinde Louer. When he had ſtayed with her ſo long as he could, for feare of being diſcouered: for that the Day beganne to appeare, he told her that now to his hearts griefe, he was inforced to leaue her: which ſhe was vnwilling he ſhould doe; that by her Embracings, kiſſes, and other kinde behauiours, he ſtayed longer then he would

haue done, and tooke ſuch full poſſeſſion of her before hée went, as ſhe thought her ſelfe the happieſt Mayden aliue: and hée himſelfe moſt fortunately bleſſed in the poſſeſſion of ſo ſweet a loue. At laſt parting with many farewels, the Damzels eyes ſomewhat dazeled with the ſport, layd her downe agayne, and ſlept ſoundly, vntill ſhe thought it time to ariſe.

When the day was ſomewhat aged by the height of the Sunne, Helyon with an exceeding merry countenance, taking a rich Landing Cup of beaten Gold, full fraught with the pureſt Wine, attyring himſelfe in his richeſt Robes, went to Conſtantias Chamber, to preſent her therewith: and entring therein, hée found his Bedfellow attired in Conſtantiaes Ornaments: with which ſight, he was ſo amazed, as that he ſtood like one in a traunce, thinking himſelfe eyther blinde, or that ſhe was Metaphorphoſed.

The Damzell likewiſe eſpying him, was aſhamed to ſée him ſtand gazing on her with ſuch a wilde countenance, that ſhe bluſht exceedingly. At laſt, Helyon fearing ſome deceyt, ſaid: Where is Conſtantia, that you are attired with her Ornaments? The Damzell making a low curteſie, ſayd: I know not where ſhe is: her Mayde bad me put on this Apparell yeſterday, appoynting me to ſtay in this place vntill her returne.

Helyon then perceiued that he was deceiued, and the Damzell in ſtead of Conſtantia had béene his Paramour that night, whome he deſired to tell him whether Conſtantia had of purpoſe perſwaded her to doe that: and alſo if ſhe knew where ſhe was. For knowe (quoth he) that thou haſt not beſtowed thy Virginity on an vnworthy perſon, but vpon the Prince of Arabia.

The Damzell humbling herſelfe vpon her knées, told him all that ſhe knew: Whereby he then perceiued that Conſtantia was fled, by reaſon that he could not finde the damzels Apparell: that taking her by the hand, he ſaid: Damzell, I perceiue Conſtantia ſtill reiecteth me: and therefore as thou in her ſtead, haſt taken poſſeſſion of my Loue, that good Will and Affection which formerly I haue borne to her, will I beare to thée: and hereafter preferre thée to ſuch dignity, as otherwiſe thou ſhouldeſt neuer attaine vnto: Withall, requeſting thée to conceale my being with thée this night, from any: For if it ſhould be knowne, it would redound to my ſhame, and thy

punishment: but when question shall be made for Constantia, tell thou all that thou knowest of my comming hither, but nothing of me: and in signe of mygood Will, I drinke to thee in this Cup of Wine, which I had thought Constantia should have tasted. This said, he left the Damzell, and so secretly as might be, he went to his owne Lodging: so much grieued in minde, fretting with veration, and desperate with anger, that he vowed to be reuenged, were it by neuer so cruell meanes: In his heart now hating her, whom before he doted on. Which is a signe of an inconstant disposition: for true Loue could by no meanes be altered.

It was not long before Constantia was mist, and the Newes thereof came to the King her Father, who with the Queene, marueled thereat, causing all diligent Enquirie to be made: but no other newes was heard of them, but that she was gone, and a strange Damzell left in her stead. Who being brought before the King, told them the cause of her comming, and how she was vsed after by a Gentlewoman that wayted on Constantia. Whereupon the King caused all the Ladyes and Gentlewomen in the Court to be brought before him but amongst them all, she could not tell which was shee: for Dela had altered her apparell in such sort, that the Damzell was as ignorant of knowing her, as of any of the rest.

The King was so exceedingly inraged, that he was ready to teare the haire from his head, commanding that the Damzell should be punished: but at the earnest intreaties of the Queene, she was onely in disgracefull sort turned out at the Court-gates. The King for that time in an exceeding rage, betaking himselfe to his solitary Chamber, to study which was the best way to finde out his Daughter. Helyon pitying the Damzell, being now more in loue with her then euer he was with Constantia, called vnto him one of his most trustiest Seruants, willing him in secret sort to follow the Damzell: and to deliuer her a Purse full fraught with Gold, telling her that Prince Helyon sent it her: and withall, to conduct her home to her Fathers house, that he might know where to finde her. Which done, he presently went to the King, desiring him speedily to send forth Messengers to find Constantia. Who thinking Helyon had requested him thereunto, with his former pretence of Loue, caused two of his Knights priuily to be brought before him, to whom he

imparted his intent: which was, that (not making any priuy thereunto) they ſhould that Night depart ſeuerall wayes in ſearch of Conſtantia.

All things being complotted according to his minde, the Knights hauing taken their Othes of Fidelity and Secrecie, and departed, the King reſted: calming his diſquiet with ſo merry a countenance, as none ſuppoſed, but that he had remitted all regard of Conſtantia: which was ſo cloſely effected, that the Knights were diſperſed euery way in the Countrey, before there was any queſtion made of Conſtantiaes abſence.

Helyons Seruant ſurnamed Aldrus, ſoone ouertooke the Damzell, delivering her the gift his Lord had ſent, which ſhe receiued with many thanks: telling her likewiſe, that he had ſent him to attend her home. Which ſhe was likewiſe glad of, fearing her Parents diſpleaſure for ſtaying ſo long: who knew her not at the firſt ſight, but afterwards were ſatisfied by Aldrus, who learning her Name, which was Selia, left her.

CHAP. V.

The Pleaſures that paſſed betweene the two faithfull Lovers, *Perſicles* and *Conſtantia*, in the Shepheards Cottage. How a Knight that was ſent in their ſearch, found them, and what thereon enſued.

The Day being farre ſpent, the old Shepheards Wife returned with Proviſion, which ſhee had brought, dreſſing the ſame very cleanly, though after her Country faſhion, whereon Perſicles and Conſtantia fedde heartily: ſpending the reſt of the day in talke with the old Woman, vntill at Night the old Shepheard and his ſonne returned, who wondred to ſee ſuch Gueſts in his Houſe, and ſuch cheare at the fire, that was wont to ſup with a Crab put into ſowre Whigge: and calling aſide his Wife before he would enter, demanded, What they were? Husband (qd. ſhe) they came hither in the morning, deſiring me to let them haue but Houſe roome: For that loſing their way, they had wandred about all that

right,

night, and were ſore weary. They are the kindeſt people that euer I ſaw: God Husband bid them Welcome. The good old man warmed ſo kind by his Wiues intreaties, that he came in, telling them they were moſt heartily Welcome: and that both himſelfe and all that he had were at their command.

Perſicles gaue him many thankes, being much comforted with their kindneſſe, which he found diſagreeing with the humours of Ruſticke people. Supper time was come and ended, and then the old Woman called her Husband aſide, asking him where they ſhould lye? Marry (quoth he) in our owne Bed. And we for this time will make other Prouiſion: and therefore, I pray make the ſame ready in the beſt ſort you can.

Which ſayd, the old Woman went about the ſame, and the olde Man comming to them, ſayd: Becauſe I know you not, I know not what Title to giue vnto you, but leſſe then borne of Gentle blood I am ſure you are not: I am ſorry my Wealth affordeth me no better entertainement to welcome you withall. But ſuch as our homely Cottage yeeldeth, ſhall be at your diſpoſition. Deſiring you to accept this our diſable good Will, in ſtead of better performance: my Wife is making ready your Bed, which though homely, yet cleanly, we hauing no choyce but onely that, deſire you to accept it as the beſt.

I thanke you good Friend (quoth Perſicles) but we ſhall be vnmannerly to thruſt you forth of your owne Reſt: therefore we will rather ſit vp then diſquiet you. Not ſo (quoth the old man,) I haue all my lifetime beene brought vp to hardneſſe, and can endure it well, which I am ſure you cannot doe without the hazard of your healths. Then came the old Woman bringing a light to conduct them vnto the Chamber, which ſhe had dreſt ſo finely with greene Rushes and ſweet flowers, that it was moſt pleaſant, though nothing coſtly. And leauing them there departed.

Conſtantia ſeeing them gone, beganne to bluſh, to thinke ſhe muſt be Perſicles Bed-fellow, which he perceiuing, folding her in his armes, ſayd: Now Conſtantia, you muſt bee a Wife before you are married, which name you cannot now refuſe, hauing giuen your conſent thereunto already. I muſt of force be your Bed-fellow, vnleſſe you will haue me lye on the greene Rushes: therefore I

pray tell me: Whether you are willing to fauour me ſo much, or no?

Conſtantia betwixt a modeſt baſhfulneſſe, and a modeſt deſire, ſtood mute, not knowing whether to conſent or deny. Sometimes thinking her denyall might diſquiet him: and againe, that to yeild, might make him ſuſpect her of lightneſſe: So that betwixt Feare and Hope, ſhe continued ſilent, as it were ouercome with a deepe ſtudy.

Perſicles ſmiling thereat, ſayd: My deare Loue, I know with what motiues your minde is now agitated: if you thinke it will impaire your Honor to be my chaſt Bed-fellow, I will rather loſe my life then perſwade you thereto: but if you will vouchſafe me ſuch fauour as to lye by you, in the moſt vertuous ſort, I proteſt it ſhall be no diſhonour to you, for that your Virgin purity ſhall not be ſpotted by the leaſt thought of vnlawfull attempt in me: wherein if you will truſt me: you ſhall finde that I will vſe you both as beſeemeth your Eſtate, agreeth with your Honour, and the vertuous meaning of a true Friend.

My Lord (ſayd Conſtantia,) doe not thinke me eyther ſo immodeſtly ſcornefull to diſtruſt you, or ſo curious to thinke it will impaire my Name to be your Bedfellow: Onely this I would wiſh, that the Rights of Marriage were performed, and then I were at your diſpoſition.

Lady (quoth he,) What needeth ſuch ſtrict performance of the outward Ceremonies, which maketh not the Marriage: but thoſe are truely Married, that with vnited hearts haue plighted Promiſe of perpetuall friendſhip: electing one the other by true Loue, and not outward Ceremony: For where true Loue is not, there can be no perfect Marriage, though the outward Ceremony be neuer ſo deuoutly performed. Therefore if my opinion can preuaile with you, we being without meanes to vſe the outward Ceremony, may confirme as true and lawfull a Contract betwixt our ſelues, as euer was eſtabliſhed by the rights of the Church. This alſo moueth me vſe theſe reaſons, ſithence the meanes of performance of that being wanting, we may neuertheleſſe ſtill protract our happineſſe: For who are more happier then thoſe that liue in perfect Loue, though neuer ſo miſerable: For my part, I eſteeme your louing company

abode

aboue all ioyes: and the fruition of your Loue, more deare to me, then a thousand liues without the same. Then I beseech you let my intreaties so much prevaile, that I may with your free consent possesse your Loue: For I vowe never to loue or chuse other then your selfe.

Constantia hearing his speeches, and many other reasons that he alleadged: At last made this answer. My Lord, relying upon your vertues, true Loue, and honourable meaning, I yeild to your Request, giuing my Consent to be your Wife for euer: desiring you to dispose of me according to your minde: for you shall finde me alwayes obedient at your command. Thus ending their speeches, with many Embracings, they addrest themselues to their Wyddall Bed, which resembled such a Bed indeed: For the old Woman had deckt the Bed with her best linnen, and other furniture, stucke the same round about with sweete Roses, strowed the Chamber, with greene Rushes, filled the Windowes with greene Boughs and Flowers so thicke in every place, giuing such a sweete sauour, that it might well be tearmed a Shepheards Paradise.

The two Louers being in Bed, vsed that behauiour such Louers doe, thinking themselues Fortunate, the place pleasant, their meetings happy, and their Loue sweete, enioying content without controll: Loue without lust: and pleasure without pride: he thinking his loues without compare, and she thinking none to be compared with hers. The Byrds without, singing their sweete Dyties in stead of Musicke, and the sweet Philomele, hard by the Wall, with a merry note reioycing at their pleasure.

Thus did they passe ouer this night with exceeding content: and the next day in communication with the Shepheard, who committed both the Flockes to the gouernment of his Sonne, for that himselfe would stay to beare them company: to whome he bare such an inward loue, wrought in him by a naturall motion, that he thought himselfe most happy to doe them any pleasure.

Some three dayes staied they with the Shepherd, being past feare to be discouered, for that they heard not of any Enquirie was made after them. At last one of the Knights that the King of Persia had priuily sent forth in their search, chaunced to come into the Plaines where the Shepheards Sonne was keeping his Sheepe, to whom he said:

ſaid: Shepheard, didſt thou not ſée a Damzell lately paſſe by this way? Not I anſwered he: Why, what Damzell is it you aske for? The Knight either by his countenance, or ſtuttering in his anſwer, ſuppoſing it might be he had ſéene her, ſaid: It is a friend of mine that I eſtéeme dearely: She promiſed me I ſhould heare of her hereabout, but my fortune hath not yet been ſo good, I cannot tell (ſaid the Shepheard) it may be my father can tell you, who dwelleth hard by yander thicket. The Knight with that left him, and Rode to the Shepheards houſe, where he alighting, entred without calling, and found the Shepheard, his Wife, Perſicles, and Conſtantia, altogether: and preſently knowing Conſtantia, he ſayd. Lady Conſtantia, the King your Father makes great lamentation for your abſence at the Court. With that they knew they were betrayed, and ſhe with feare and griefe, fell downe in a trance: Whom with much adoe they recouered. My friend (quoth Perſicles,) thou art either very vnmannerly, or thy Authority is great, that thou intrudeſt thyſelfe into our Company. Doeſt thou know that this is Conſtantia? Then where is thy reuerence to her? Were it not for diſquieting her, that is already diſtempered with thy preſence, thou ſhouldſt finde colde entertainement.

The Knight being much grieued to ſée Conſtantia ſo diſquieted, ſaid: I am ſorry my preſence hath troubled her, which was contrary to minde; for be it farre from my thought to worke her diſquiet: the King of Perſia miſſing her, hath ſent out diuers beſides my ſelfe, to ſéeke her, with Commandement to bring her backe to the Court, and amongſt the reſt, you ſée it is fallen to my lot to performe it: yet ſuch regard doe I beare vnto her, that I will not doe any thing diſagréeing to her honorable minde. Conſtantia hearing his ſpeeches, ſaid: what is your name? My name (ſayd he) is Piſor. Art thou of Aſſyria, (quoth Perſicles) and one of the Knightes belonging to Piera? I am ſaid he. Then I feare not but thou beareſt a Knightly minde, and wilt rather conceale this Ladies being here, then betray her, by carrying her backe: If not (for her owne ſake,) yet for Perſicles thy King, whom ſhe loueth, and thou ſhouldeſt obey. Were it quoth he, to venture my life for my Prince, I would moſt willingly doe it, and if the Lady loueth him, and for that hath left the Court, I will hazard my life in her defence: and to my vttermoſt

power

power procure her hearts deſire. Then knew Piſor, that Perſicles heareth thy kinde ſpeaches and hath not failed in his kinde opinion, of thy vertues: For I am he, though thus diſguiſed, With that Piſor knew him, and humbled himſelfe with great reuerence vnto him vpon his knee.

Perſicles riſing vp, embraced him, telling him that he came in a moſt Fortunate houre to doe him pleaſure. Conſtantia with this, was comforted againe, and forgot her former paſſion of feare. The old ſhepheard and his wife were halfe amazed, vntill Perſicles ſaid: Father, be not any way diſquieted with my knowledge: for though I am King of Aſſyria, I am thy Gueſt, and will for thy kindneſſe reward thee liberally: deſiring thee not to diſcouer me to any: For if thou ſhouldeſt, it might hazard this Ladies life and mine: that are now in thy hands. With that, they both kneeled downe, vowing that nothing would make them ſo diſloyall. Then he ſaid to Piſor, of old experience I know thou loueſt me, and therefore I make no queſtion of thy Fidelity, or doubt that thou wilt vndertake any thing to pleaſure me. Therefore I would haue thee (with as much haſte as might be) to Poſt into Aſſyria, vnto Parenus and Thrureus, whom I left my ſubſtitutes, and to them make my eſtate knowne: telling them, that my deſire is, that they come to me into this place, with a ſufficient number of Horſemen to Guard me, and the Princeſſe Conſtantia home: but to let none know their intent: which I take is the beſt courſe for our ſafety. For if we ſhould take other meanes by trauell, Conſtantia is not able to endure it: which alſo might be a meanes to diſcouer vs. ſo many being abroad in our ſearch. Piſor preſently obeyed him, and taking his leaue, departed: whom we will leaue onwards of his Journey, and Perſicles and Conſtantia in the Shepheards-cottage.

CHAP. VI.

How *Helyon* was in loue with *Selia*, and hearing of his Fathers ſicknes, obtained leaue to depart. And of the Deſolation that was befallen in *Aſſiria*, by the treaſon of Duke *Oreus*.

HElyon remembring the pleaſure he had with his country Louer, deſired to ſee her againe: with whom he was more deeply

in Loue, then euer he was with Conſtantia: for the Loue he before bare to her, was turned to hatred: and the cauſe of his importunacie to the King to haue her found, was with a malicious diſpoſition of Reuenge: not of any Honourable inclination, being of ſuch variable and inconſtant Nature, that the leaſt occaſion altered his wauering minde, either to loue or hatred: Which was vnfit for a man of ſo great a birth as he deriued himſelfe from. And now hauing paſt many dayes, colouring his pretence vnder the ſhadow of fained ſorrow, he longed to viſite his Louer Selia. Therefore finding a time fit for his intent, he with his Seruant Aldrus, rode thither. At his comming, finding Selia, againe cloathed in her Countrey-Weedes. Who eſpying him, with a modeſt bluſh came to meet him: Whom he imbraced moſt kindely in his armes, asking her how ſhee fared? My Lord (ſayd ſhe) your Hand-mayde reioyceth to ſee your worthy perſon, in this homely Cottage, whoſe heart can attaine no quyet, but by your remembrance. By this time, her Parents were come in, who ſeeing the Prince, did him humble reuerence: He likewiſe ſaluting them with great curteſie. When he had ſtayed there moſt part of the day in priuate conference with his Loue, hee departed: The next day repayring thither againe. Which hee likewiſe did for many dayes after.

In the end, growing to ſuch extremity of paſſion, that he told Selia, hee would Marrie her: and withall, made her Parents acquainted therewith, who willingly gaue their conſent thereto: and by this meanes, he enioyed her company at all times according to his deſire.

In this ſort did hee viſite her many dayes, doting exceedingly on his Countrey-Selia, thinking no Ladie in the Court comparable vnto her, and likewiſe diſſembling exceeding griefe for Conſtantia, ſo that the King highly commended his conſtancy, eſteeming him the more for not altering his minde. Within few dayes, Newes was brought to the Perſian-Court, that the King of Arabia was very ſicke: which cauſed Helyon to deſire the King of Perſias conſent, to his departure: which hee graunted: firſt hauing receiued his faithfull Oath to Marrie Conſtantia, which he ſware to performe at his returne.

Moſt of the Knights that went in ſearch of Conſtantia were

returned

returned, not one of them bringing Newes of her: Which drave the King into such a rage, that he seemed quite bereft of sence: causing them to make more open Enquirie, and to promise great Reward to those that could tell of her.

By this time likewise Pisor had beene in Assyria, and againe returned to the Shepheards house: Whom Persicles welcommed, as glad that he was so soone returned. But Pisors countenance bewrayed some ill Newes, which Persicles soone perceived: and being unwilling Constantia should heare ought that might breed in her any discontent, walked aside with him into the Thicket of a Wood, hard by the house, where Pisor sayd: My Lord, I have a Tragicke discourse to reveale, that maketh my heart melt to thinke thereof: which I would had not been my ill Fortune to have brought you newes of.

At my comming into Assyria, I passed many myles before I found an Assyrian to converse withall: For that the Townes and Villages which before were repleat with store of Inhabitants, were now consumed by Fire, and not a house standing alone, but was dispoyled, and the people from their dwellings fled away, which caused me make the more haste: hoping that all was not destroyed. And comming more neare the Court, in my way I found the bodies of the Assyrians lying dead, and confusedly strowed upon the Earth, as if some battell had béene lately fought in that place: Those which lay dead, seeming to have fled to save their lives. And the farther I past, the more did the number increase: which I followed so long, that I was perswaded, those that destroyed them were not farre off, but yet went so fast before me, that I could not overtake them, for the bodyes of some were not yet cold, and others lay strugling to overmaster Death. Wherewith I was so amazed, that I set spurres to my Steeds sides, and rode with all the hast I could, untill at last I espyed a mighty Army of Souldiers, right before me, upon the Mount Silo, whose multitude seemed to be innumerable. Neare unto which, I was no sooner come, but I espyed an Assyrian wounded grievously, to whom I drew nigh, and soone knew him to be Parenus, and discovering my selfe unto him, desired him to tell me what Treason had brought him to that dangerous estate. With that he knowing me, sayd.

Piſor, ſuch miſery is befalne vs Aſſirians, as wée ſhall be a reproach and ſcandall to all the World: Which I would repeate, but before that I can make an end, Death will ſtop my ſpeech: therefore firſt tell me how my Lady Piera fareth?

Noble Duke (ſaid I) ſhe is in good health, and in great proſperity. I reioyce thereat (quoth hée,) though I haue otherwiſe euerlaſting cauſe to ſorrow. For our Soueraigne Lord the King, after he had put the Armenians to flight, was very deſirous vpon ſome occaſion (as yet vnknowne) to leaue the Court, in his abſence committing the gouernment thereof to my vnhappy ſelfe, and that Noble Knight Thrurens, which we performed with great quiet: vntill Duke Oretus, one that was neuer true to the State, hearing of the Kings departure, which we could by no meanes conceale, raiſed a falſe report, that we two had murthered the King: Which Rumor moued the Common-people to ſuch diſquiet, that they beganne to Rebell: Which he perceiuing (ayming thereby to winne the Crowne,) gathered a great multitude of them together, with pretence of reuenge againſt vs, which when we heard of, with all the haſt we could poſſible, we muſtered men for our defence: but ſo eager were the multitude to our deſtruction, together with Oretus perſwaſions, that before we were any way able to reſiſt them, they ſet vpon vs, and ſhed a great number of their owne Country-mens blood, that ſtood in our defence, and drane vs to immure our ſelues within the Citie. The King of Armenia hearing of this rebellion, with great ſpéed brought a mighty great Army into this Land, deſtroying all that came in his way, burning both Townes and Cities, and deſtroying the common people with an exceeding great Slaughter. Which came to Oretus hearing, with ſuch terror, that he preſently fled, and left his Confederate Rebels to be deſtroyed by the Enemy: Which cauſed vs by a Herauld to demaund whether they would ſubmit themſelues to vs or no? or by their treaſon to ſée their Countries ruine? With that they yéelded, and we gathered all the Forces we could to reſiſt the Enemies, with whom we fought three great Battels, and in the ſame loſt aboue thirty thouſand Aſſirians, being driuen to flight: this day againe gathering head to reſiſt them: but being too few in number, in reſpect of their ſtrength and multitude, you ſée how our bodies be ſcattered vpon the Earth, mangled and cut in pieces: My ſelfe being

ing

ing I thinke, the laſt that liueth to tell this newes. For the Noble Thrureus is already ſlaine, whoſe deedes of Valour would containe a great volume: Which newes when our King ſhall heare, it will no doubt cut off his vertuous life with ſorrow. My greateſt griefe being that I cannot heare of his ſafety before my death. My Lord, ſaid I, our gracious King is liuing, and in good health in Perſia, who ſent me vnto your Honour and Thrureus, with a ſecret Meſſage which I neede not now vnfold. Yes good Piſor, (quoth he) let me heare my Lords Meſſage, that I may thereby know whether I were ſtill in his fauour or no. With that I vnfolded the cauſe of my comming: Which heard, ſuch a paſſion of diſcontent ouercame his vitall ſpirits, that with many bitter groanes he gaue vp the Ghoſt. When I ſaw there was no meanes for his recouery, I departed, to enquire what ſlaughter the Enemy had made, who by that time the day was ended, had vanquiſhed the Aſſyrian forces, taking the Citty, and moſt of the Nobility Priſoners. I ſtayed ſome foure dayes, hiding me ſecretly to bring you certaine Newes, which is this. The King of Armenia compelled the Noble men to ſweare Allegeance vnto Palyon, his eldeſt Sonne, whom he hath crowned King in Aſſiria, and left a mighty Army for his defence. When I vnderſtood this, I returned to certifie your Highnes thereof.

CHAP. VII.

How *Perſicles* hearing the newes by *Piſor*, hee departed into a ſolitary place, and thereby cauſed the vnfortunate ſeparation betweene him and *Conſtantia*, who in great ſorrow wandring to ſeeke him, was found by *Helyon*, and carried into *Arabia*. And of the many ſorrowes *Perſicles* endured for her abſence. How *Piſor* became franticke.

PErſicles heart was ouercome with ſuch ſorrow, to heare Piſors heauy Newes, that he had much adoe to containe himſelfe from extreame madneſſe: that he minded a while to withdraw himſelfe, to vtter his plaints in thoſe ſolitary walks: but ſeeing Piſor follow him, he deſired him to returne to the Shepheards houſe, and in no caſe to acquaint Conſtantia with theſe misfortunes. But if ſhe

aſked for him, he ſhould tell her he would come preſently.

Piſor being departed, he ſought for the moſt vnfrequented place of the Wood, wandring long in that diſcontent, but could find none agreeable to his mind: neither knowing whether he went, nor almoſt what he intended: his ſences being toſſed with ſuch paſſionate veration, continuing ſo long therein, that he ſpent longer time in ſeeking out a place of reſt, then he was aware of, which turned to his greater vnreſt, as afterwards it fell out. For Conſtantia marvelling that he ſtayed ſo long, and withall noting Piſors darkened countenance, ſuppoſed ſome ill newes was the cauſe of both, finding occaſion fit, thought to find her Lone in the midſt of his dumps, and with her amiable preſence to comfort him, ſtole from the Cottage into the Wood, where Piſor told her that he had left him: Where ſhe wandered vp and downe a great while, not finding him, which made her marvell, ſometimes calling him, but not by his right name, leaſt any ſhould heare her: and finding that meanes to prevaile nothing, ſhe began to enter into many doubtfull thoughts; ſometimes calling his Loyalty in queſtion, then againe, reproving her fancies, for entring into ſuſpition of him, then thinking ſome ill newes was befalln in Aſſyria, which might drive him into a careleſſe deſperation, and alſo fearing that ſome of the Perſian Knights had met with him, and finding ſome likelyhood of ſuſpition in him, had carried him to the King her Father. Theſe Meditations poſſeſt her mind ſo long, and wrought ſuch a terrour in her fancies, that ſhe fared like one that had beene poſſeſt with the truth, that it was ſo. Thus did they both continue moſt part of that day, ſhe ſeeking him, and he oppreſt with care, not remembring that it was time to returne home, yet both of them directing their ſteps a contrary way, that they met not, but wandred a from one another. At laſt, he began to remember where he was, how long he had beene abſent, and what care ſhe would take for his abſence, which cauſed him with as much ſpeed to haſt backe, as with careleſneſſe he had wandred vp & down, which before he could attaine, it grew to be towards Night. Piſor likewiſe marvelling at his long ſtay, and at Conſtantines ſudden departure, fearing that ſome ill might betide him, and ſome extraordinary care oppreſſe her, leſt the Cottage to find him, and if he could meet her, to direct her to the place where he left him.

When

When Perſicles found them both abſent, he marueiled thereat: Enquiring of the old Woman when they departed: who told him that Conſtantia went firſt out, and he after her. Which made him thinke, that the miſſing him ſo long, might goe to ſeeke him: and Piſor followed her, thinking to direct her, leaſt ſhe ſhould wander aſtray, as ſhe might well doe in thoſe vnfrequented places. But when he had a long time continued in thoſe dumps, and ſaw neither of them returne, he began to enter into many miſdoubts, ſuch as proceed from the vnquiet motions of diſtempered thoughts: being fearefull to depart thence againe, leaſt he might ſo miſſe them.

Piſor being entred the Wood, came to the place where he had left Perſicles, but could neyther find him there, nor Conſtantia, which made him wander vp and downe ſo long, that he was weary: At laſt comming to a ſhady place, and laying himſelfe downe to reſt, caſting vp his eyes, eſpyed moſt beautifull fruit vpon a Tree, hanging right ouer his head: The ſight whereof pleaſed him ſo well, that plucking ſome of the ſame, he found the taſte pleaſant, which cauſed him to eate many of them: which made him preſently to fall into a deadly ſleepe. The name of the Fruit is called *Pilos*, the nature whereof is, to procure thoſe that taſte thereof, firſt to ſleepe, without awaking, for the ſpace of foure and twenty houres, and after to become Franticke, for the ſpace of three Moneths, which hindred Piſor from returning.

When Perſicles had ſtayed ſo long expecting their returne, vntill it beganne to be darke, he againe went out, telling the Shepheard that he was going to ſeeke them: cruell Fortune directing his ſteps directly to the place whereas Piſor lay ſleeping, whom he beheld, and neyther by calling, nor by any other meanes could awake him: a deadly feare poſſeſt his Fancie, that ſome furious Beaſt had ſlaine him, and eyther deuoured Conſtantia, or purſued her, flying from him; Which cauſed him like a Franticke man to draw forth Piſors Sword, running vp and downe to ſeeke that which was not there to be found.

Conſtantia by this time was wandred ſo farre in ſearch of Perſicles, that ſhe could by no meanes tell which way to returne againe, but ſhe was conſtrained all that night to wander vp and down, with hope to haue returned. But contrary to her thought, going a

quite

quite contrary way, her feare and care cauſing her to make the more ſpeed: ſhe being wearied with trauell, comming to the out-ſide of the Wood, ſhe ſate downe vpon a Banke, and there, after ſhe had bewailed her miſerable eſtate, and wearied her ſences with ſorrow, as ſhe had her body with trauell, ſhe fell aſleepe.

Now it ſo fell out, that Helyon the day before, had taken his leaue of the King of Perſia, to trauell into Arabia, and that night lay at Seliaes Fathers, cauſing her to be attired in rich Ornaments, that morning carried her with him into Arabia, intending there to make her his Bride: and by misfortune, paſt by the place where Conſtantia lay faſt aſleepe: ſome of his followers ſome eſpied her, and ſhewed her to Helyon. Selia likewiſe ſeeing her, preſently told Helyon that her Apparell was eyther the ſame which Conſtantias Gentlewoman tooke from her in the Perſian Court or ſo like it, that ſhe could not know one from the other. Helyon himſelfe rode to her and awaked her, by his former diſpoſition, and her countenance, which was ſtill in his remembrance, perfectly knowing her. ſhe likewiſe at the very firſt ſight knowing him, which amazed her ſences with deadly feare. To whom he ſaid: My deare Conſtantia, What hath cauſed you thus diſcourteouſly to reiect my Loue, and leaue the Perſian Court, to endure this hard Fortune, ſo much diſagreeing to your Eſtate? Yet at length I beſeech you accept of my Loue, and goe with me into Arabia.

Leaue of your diſſembling ſpeeches (quoth Conſtantia) and let me alone: For I had rather all my life lye on this cold Earth, then liue in all eaſe with you. With that ſhe would haue left him, but he commaunded his Seruants to take her by force into the Coach, and ſo carry her along with him into Arabia: not letting any know what ſhe was, but onely his Selia. When Conſtantia ſaw that of force ſhe muſt needs goe, ſhe vttered ſuch plaints, and made ſuch ſorrowfull exclamations, that thoſe which guarded her, thought ſhe would haue fallen madde: though neither knowing her, nor her cauſe of ſorrow, yet inwardly in their hearts pittying her.

Whom we will leaue, fully poſſeſt with the vttermoſt extremity of anguiſh, ontwards towards Arabia, the place ſhe moſt of all loathed, to ſpeake of Perſicles, who in a madde fury hauing runne vp and downe a great while in the Wood, againe returned into the ſhep-

heards

heards houſe, ſee if Conſtantia were not yet returned, but there he found onely the Shepheard and his Wife in great care, awaiting his returne: who eſpying the Sword in his hand, and his face and hands in many places bloody, which was with the ſcratches he had receiued in the darke Wood, were ready to run from him for feare: but he mildly demaunded if Conſtantia were yet come backe, who told him they ſaw her not? Alas (qd. hee) poore Ladie, I feare ſhe is deuoured by ſome mercileſſe Beaſt: For I found Piſor lying dead in the Wood: Which affrighteth me with ſuch feare of her miſhap, that I know not what to doe, nor which way to goe in her ſearch.

My Lord (ſaid the olde Shepheard) I can aſſure you, there doth no Wilde Beaſt haunt this Wood, for then could not my flockes feede in quyet: of which I haue not loſt one Lambe by any caſualtie: but rather I thinke my Lady miſſing you all the day, is wandred ſo farre into the Wood, that ſhe cannot returne, nor you finde her: whom I doe not doubt but to finde in the Morning: neither is he dead, but I beleiue hath taſted ſome of our vnluckie fruit called Pylos, that hath caſt him into a dead ſleepe, and after that he will be Franticke for a certaine ſpace.

Perſicles was wonderfully comforted with the Shepheards ſpeeches, yet notwithſtanding leauing him, and all that Night wandring vp and downe the Wood to finde her, but he ſpent his labour in vaine, neyther that night nor the next day finding her, which draue him ſo farre beyond the compaſſe of naturall continencie, that if hee remained long in that extreame perplexity, it would cut of his life. When hee ſaw himſelfe voyde of all hope, without meanes how to finde her, and aſſurance that ſhe was not within the Wood, he layde him downe vpon the earth, vttering theſe lamentes. How fortunate had I been had I neuer ſet foote in ỹ Perſian ſoyle: thē had I ſlaine the King of Aſſyria, & Conſtantia in quiet in her Fathers Court: whereas now, both I, but eſpecially her ſelfe, are fallen into extreame miſery. Had it onely falne to my ſhare to haue indured a thouſand more miſfortunes, I could with patience haue endured them: onely this tormenteth mee, that my miſfortune hath brought her from Weale to woe: from quiet to diſcontent: from pleaſure, to paine: from happineſſe to miſery, and from life to death. I cannot tell how to preuent theſe euils, to ſit here, and vtter ſad words auaileth me not: to

bewaile her eſtate, helpeth her: nor to deſtroy my ſelfe, will benefit her: ſhould I ſit ſtill heere, ſo ſhall I neuer finde her: and to ſeeke far her out of this place, is to ſpend my Labours without hope of comfort. For I feare me ſhe is dead, and then may I ſooner méete her Ghoſt in this place, then her Body in another. Well, ſince neither comfort nor counſell is left to further my hopes, I will for euer dwell in this vnfortunate place, and fill the ſame with my Laments: neither ſhall my Body reſt in bed, nor my ſtomacke taſt of other meat then Wilde fruit, vntill I finde my Loue, or be aſſured of the place of her abode.

Thus liued he in thoſe Woods many dayes, and many yeares, making euery Tree a monument of Conſtantias vnfortunate loſſe, though he were often diſwaded by Piſor, who afterwards trauelled moſt parts of all thoſe Countryes in ſearch of her, but could neuer heare of her. The King of Perſia had likewiſe giuen ouer all care of Conſtantia, as ſuppoſing her to be dead: greatly lamenting the misfortunes of Perſicles, and marueiling at his abſence, beléeuing verily that he was murthered, according to the accuſation made by Oretus, againſt Parenus and Thrureus. Whom we will all leaue for a while, to ſpeake of the misfortunes befell to Conſtantia.

CHAP. VIII.

How *Selia* was married to *Helyon*, and of the miſeries *Conſtantia* endured by her iealouſie. How *Conſtantia* was deliuered of a goodly Boy: whoſe life was preſerued by the pollicie of *Palia*, and how *Selia* vexed thereat.

HElyon was no ſooner arriued in Arabia, but he was informed of his Fathers death, which for a time he lamented of common courſe, not of pietie or affection: in the meane time, cauſing Conſtantia to be kept in the old Monaſterie vnder the gouernment of an ancient Ladie, that liued not onely by the gifts of the King beſtowed vpon her, for many badde actions, but alſo

alſo of many Gentlemen that haunted the Company of the Kings Concubines by ſtealth. In this place did he put Conſtantia, neyther her Keeper, nor any other knowing what ſhe was: Who by this time had reſolued to endure any aduerſity, for many dayes giuing her ſelfe to quiet, for that by reaſon of his counterfeit mourning, he came not at her.

But the time being come that he was Crowned King, and on the ſame day likewiſe married Selia, cauſing poore Conſtantia as one of her Handmaides ta attend her: Which he did of a malicious intent, onely to vexe her: but ſhe was well contented to doo any thing to rid her of his hatefull Loue, whom ſhe abhorred in the very depth of her Soule. But when he ſaw ſhe endured the ſame with ſuch Patience, he againe cauſed her to be cloſely kept in that Monaſtery: giuing commandement that none [redacted] the old Lady named Palia, ſhould come at her.

Thus did ſhe continue, vntill ſhe began to feele her ſelfe with Child by Perſicles, which draue her to the vttermoſt exigent of care, how to preſerue her Infants life: ſometimes purpoſing to make her eſtate knowne to Palia, but hauing ſufficient tryall of her wicked diſpoſition, ſhe durſt not truſt her, leaſt ſhe ſhould reueale the ſame to the King.

Selya likewiſe at that very inſtant was great with Child by Helyon, both Conceiuing at one inſtant, the one in the Perſian Court, and the other in the Shepheards cottage. Selia made Helyon acquainted therewith, deſiring that ſhe might be deliuered thereof in ſome priuate place, where the Ladyes of the Court might not know thereof, which would turne to her euerlaſting ſcandall.

Helyon well knowing the nature of the people, in what deteſtable ſort they held adultery in their Realme, thought no place ſo fit for the accompliſhment thereof, as in the Monaſtery where Conſtantia was, vnto which place ſhe was ſone conueyed: report being giuen out by the Kings command, that ſhe was for the preſeruation of her health, ſecretly departed into the Country.

The Queene being come into the Monaſtery, asked for Conſtantia, who was preſently brought before her, whom Selia now began to hate mortally, being very Jealous of her, and ſuppoſing that

the King ſtill Loued her: whom ſhe vſed ſo diſdainfully vpbrayding her with many vndecent ſpeeches. Which Conſtantia tooke moſt patiently, only with Teares lamenting her miſfortunes. And ſo proudly and ſcornefully did ſhe behaue her ſelfe towards Palia, and all that attended her, that they began to diſlike of her.

Palia ſeeing the pride of the Queene, and in what diſdainfull ſort ſhe vſed her, accuſing her to be priuy to the Kings ſecret loue to Conſtantia, vſing her ſo diſtruſtfully, and with ſuch euill tearmes, began to hate her. Which Conſtantia perceiued by ſome doubtfull ſpeeches ſhe gaue out againſt her. Whereupon, finding a fit opportunity, when ſhe was vexed with her vnkindneſſe, ſhe came to Palia, and ſaid: I perceiue the Queene vſeth you but vnkindly, regarding to vſe none well, though they giue her no cauſe at all. She likewiſe miſuſeth me, that neuer in my life offended her, but haue beene the greateſt cauſe of her good. I would gladly intreate your aid, and withall reueale many things vnto you, that you yet know not, if I were aſſured of your ſecrecie: which I am the more fearfull to reueale, for that they are matters of importance, wherein notwithſtanding if you would vouchſafe your aſſiſtance to pitty my miſerable eſtate, you ſhall doe a deed of euerlaſting merit.

Palia hearing her ſpeeches, ſayd: If I may likewiſe without feare make my minde knowne vnto you, be you aſſured I doe ſo mortally hate her, that rewardeth my dutifull ſeruice with diſdaine, that I will not leane any thing vnattempted to vexe her, and pleaſure you: therefore if an Oath may aſſure you of my ſecrecie, hauing no other meanes at this inſtant to giue proofe thereof, I vow by all the good I ever expect, neuer to reueale what you diſcloſe to me, but moſt faithfully labour to pleaſure you to my power. Then know (qd. Conſtantia) that I am Daughter to the King of Perſia, ſometimes brought vp in this Court: and your Queene but the Daughter of a Countrey-Swaine in Perſia, that being exalted to dignity, though baſely borne, behaueth her ſelfe thus proudly: I fearing my Father would haue married me to Helyon againſt my will, hauing betrothed my ſelfe to the King of Aſſyria, with him ſtole from the Court in this Apparell of Selia, that is now your Queene: much ſearch was made for me, but they could neuer finde me: for I liued with my Lord in this diſguiſe in a Shepheards houſe, vntill one day

I miſ-

I missing him strayed so farre from the House, that I could not returne, but by misfortune was found by Helyon, and thus as you see brought into this Countrey, either to my death or to a worser end. I am likewise great with Child, and within short space shall be delivered. My earnest desire is, that you would use some meanes to preserve my Babe from death, which no doubt it is likely to endure by her malice and his cruelty.

Palia having heard her speeches, Reverenced her, comforted her, and promised her with many Vowes and Protestations, to fulfill her desire, thereby to worke some revenge against the Queene. In her heart pitying the distresse of Constantia, of whose Vertues she had before times some knowledge. With this Promise did Constantia somewhat comfort her selfe, hoping yet in the end to escape from that Bondage, being daily cherished by old Palia: who behaved her selfe towards Selia, with such duty and obedience, notwithstanding her often upbrayings, that she still kept her selfe in most place of credit about her.

The Day being now come that the Queene was delivered of a goodly Boy, and Constantia the next Night of another, none being privy thereto but Palia, who handled the matter with such cunning, that she conveyed Constantiaes Child to Selia, and hers to Constantia, making her acquainted with her intent therein. The next day declaring to Helyon, how that the Damzell in her custody was delivered of a Boy. Helyon hearing that, willing her to keepe the same secret from any, upon paine of death: Not so much as once to reveale it to the Queene, vowing ere many dayes to destroy it. Giving Order to have his owne Christened, naming him Petus: And comming to the Queene, told her it were best to be Nursed in the Countrey, who was contented to be ruled by him. Then calling to him Palia, he told her, that she must needs provide a Nurse for his Sonne, who already having complotted what she intended, told him that she knew a Kinswoman of hers, that was lately brought to Bed, some twenty miles off in the Countrey, to whom she would (if it liked him) convey the Infant.

Helyon was glad of her promise, appointing her all things fit for her departure, the next morning. Late in the Evening, when Palia was sure none could see her, she went to Constantia, telling her

what ſhe had intended: Withall, asking her counſell what her ſhould doe.

Aye me (quoth Conſtantia) I know not in this extremity what to reſolue vpon, fearing neuer to ſee my Sonne againe: and if thou goeſt loſing my greateſt comfort. Then taking the Childe in her armes, and beſtowing many Teare-wet kiſſes thereon, ſhe ſaid Palia, I pray thee let me know what thou intendeſt to doe with it? Lady (quoth ſhe) if you perſwade me not to the contrary, after I am departed this Court, I will neuer leaue trauelling vntill I arriue in Aſſyria: where I doe not doubt but to find Pericles, vnto whom I will declare your misfortunes: But if I finde him not there, I will then Trauell into Perſia, to the place where you loſt him, where I ſhall then aſſuredly find him: that he (knowing your eſtate) may ſeeke to releaſe you. And wilt thou doe this for me (ſayd Conſtantia) that am neuer likely to make thee amends? I will (qd. Palia) and with ſuch faithfulneſſe execute the charge I vndertake, as ſhall turne to thy euerlaſting quiet.

Many ſpeeches paſt betwixt them before they parted, but yet in the end ſhe was conſtrained to leaue Conſtantia, almoſt dead with griefe, but afterwards ſomewhat comforted, with the good hope ſhe had of her faithfull dealing: Of two euils thinking it the beſt to commit the Babe to her cuſtody, who by all likelyhoods intended well thereto. Early the next Morning Palia departed, hauing none in her Company, with all the haſt ſhe could trauelling towards Aſſyria.

Helyon, now beganne to meditate on Conſtantia's Fortune, and who ſhould be the Father of her Childe: and whereas before he determined to penne her vp in that Cloyſter, vntill ſhe would yeild to his deſire, he now reſolued to reuenge the diſdaine ſhe had ſhowne, in refuſing his Loue, with all Cruelty: that finding occaſion when none could interrupt his ſpeeches, being alone with her in her chamber, he thus ſayd. Diſdainefull and diſcourteous Lady, did you eſteeme ſo baſely of my Loue, in my contempt, to chooſe ſome baſe-borne Peaſant, to poſſeſſe that which I long ſought with ſuch deuoted affection: and refuſing my Honorable proffer, to chuſe rather to become anothers Harlot. Who would euer haue thought thy comely perſon ſhadowed with ſo faire a pretext, had inwardly nouriſhed

ſuch

ſuch innoble affections. Doe you thinke the King of Perſia will re-ioyce to heare that his faire Daughter Conſtantia, (that may well be termed Incontinencie) hath ſo vildely ſtained her Princely bloud and defamed her Royall ſtocke, with ſo infamous a fact, or not ra-ther dye with griefe,

Therefore to preuent ſo great a miſchiefe as will come by his death, I will be the meane to keep thy fact from cõming to his know-ledge, and in his behalfe, worke ſuch Reuenge as ſhall be agreeable, to ſo great an offence. Yet let me know the cauſe of thy contempt againſt mee, and who is the Father of thy baſtard? Which if thou refuſeſt to doe by gentle meanes to vnfold, I will by force compell thee thereunto.

Conſtantia with Patience heard out his ſpeeches, and with as great Patience anſwered him. Helyon, I can well beare your Oppro-brious ſpeeches, neyther will I impugne how ſcandalous they are: For the Father of this Infant is as good as your ſelfe, and him I Loue, farre more honourable and vertuous then Helyon, King of Arabia, who enſureth mee according to the qualitie of his owne diſpoſition. The reaſon I left my Fathers Court, was to a-uoide your importunate ſuite, which was vnpleaſing to me, in reſpect of the honourable Loue I embraced: therefore beware you abuſe not Conſtantia. For though the King of Perſia will not reuenge my wrongs, yet there is a King as mighty as he, claymeth my poſſeſſi-on, and will not ſuffer me to be iniuried.

What? is a King the Father of that Baſtard (qd. he?) No, thou ſhalt neuer perſwade mee to that, for it liketh not like a King, but as the perfect Image of a Foole. Yea (ſaid Conſtantia,) and yet a King as wiſe as thy ſelfe, and that ere long thou ſhalt know, for the Father thereof is priuy to all thy Actions, although thou thinkeſt me ſafely kept.

And if thou doeſt murther it, I care not, for thy ſelfe will be the firſt that ſhall repent the deede. And for mee, vſe me well, for the Father of this Childe loueth thee well, and yet thou wilt be thine owne deſtruction in ſeeking his death.

Helyon vnderſtood not her meaning, marueiling who it ſhould be ſhe meant, that he ſayd: I thinke thou art madde, or counterfey-teſt ſome deceyt by the ambiguities of thy ſpeeches: for how can the

Father

Father of that Wyat loue me? Or what cauſe ſhould there be to make me repent any thing that I ſhould doe to it: Which the rather ſhall ſuffer my wrath, becauſe of thy derifions: Therefore reſolue me, or be aſſured of my everlaſting hatred. I neither (ſaid ſhe) regard thée, nor thy hate: vtterly denying to fulfill thy requeſt in any reſpect. Yet if thou hadſt not demanded it, I would peraduenture haue told it thee: Doe the worſt thou canſt, I care not for miſerie, it ſelfe hath made me ſo reſolute to endure the greateſt extremitie. And know, that I ſo much the more diſlike this Babe, becauſe it is like thee, that hath no ſparke of honour or honeſty in thee. Aske me no more queſtions, for I will not anſwer thereto, eſteeming my ſelfe more fortunate in thy hatred, then thy friendſhip: for the one is but the diſtemperate motion of a Cowardly diſpoſition, and the other, the inconſtant falſhood of a ſhallow-Wit.

Helyon was much vexed to ſee how lightly ſhe eſteemed him: that almoſt ready to teare his haire, hee went raging and ſwearing from her, meditating which way to worke his Reuenge. Selia noting his diſtemperature, by his pale Countenance, asked him what had diſquieted him? To whom he gaue no anſwere at all, caſting a ſcornfull looke towards her: which ſhe tooke in ſuch ſuſpitious ſort, that ſhe preſently ſuppoſed he did it in ſcorne of her, and her heart being puft vp full of Iealouſie, could not detaine it ſelfe, from burſting forth into Teares, and then into theſe ſpeeches.

My Lord, I now perceiue the Loue you profeſſed to beare me, is altered, and I like a poore Caſt-away, like to liue in miſery: would to God I had ſtill liued in my contented eſtate in Perſia, then ſhould I not haue béene ſubiect to theſe miſfortunes. Conſtantia whom you tolde me loued you not, is ſhe that hath ſtolne away your Affection, and on her you dote, deſpiſing me: wherein you ſhew the inconſtancie of your variable diſpoſition: beſides, ſhe hath diſcloſed what I am, and that maketh me be ſcorned and deſpiſed of the Ladies of this Court, that the miſery I am like to endure is intollerable. Doe not (ſaid he) diſquiet your ſelfe with the leaſt ſuppoſe of ſuch alteration in me: for by Heauen I vow, I loue none but your ſelfe: the cauſe of my veration is, how to reuenge my ſelfe on Conſtantia, that euen now hath vſed me with opprobrious terms. Beſides, ſhe is brought in Bed of a Baſtard, begotten of ſome baſe-borne Peaſant, which

ſhall

ſhall not liue long to vexe me. I would I had left her in Perſia, to haue bæne deuoured by wilde beaſts, rather then pittying her, for to worke my ſelfe this diſquiet. Should I ſend word to the King of Perſia, he would compell me to marry her, or elſe bring open Warre againſt my Kingdome: or if I ſhould ſæke her death, the knowledge thereof would by ſome meanes come to his hearing, and then would he ſæke reuenge againſt me: that in this extremity, I knew not which way to ridde my ſelfe from her. Selia, hearing him ſay ſhe had a Baſtard, preſently beganne to ſuſpect it was his: which ſhe would then haue vttered, but that feare and premeditated hope of reuenge againſt Conſtantia, withheld her, thinking firſt to learne the truth before ſhe would offend him: perceiuing his inconſtant diſpoſition to be ſuch, that the leaſt thing altered his Loue: deferring the ſame vntill her Moneth was ended, by which meanes Conſtantia reſted voyd of diſturbance. The flame of enuious ſuſpition, burnt ſo furiouſly in her breſt, that as ſoone as ſhe had forſaken the Monaſtery, and had a while with all kindneſſe behaued her ſelfe towards the Nobles and Ladies of moſt eſtimation, thereby to inſinuate into their good opinion, ſhe came to Conſtantia, fawning vpon her with an affable countenance, & vſing many ſpæches of courteſie towards her, with intent to fiſt out the truth of her ſuſpition. Helyon, hearing that ſhe was in the Monaſtery, fearing ſhe would haue done Conſtantia ſome violence, followed her, and found her in quiet conference with her. Selia ſeeing him there, was halfe aſtoniſhed, ſuppoſing he had not knowne thereof: and withall, now of a truth ſuſpecting that he came to viſit Conſtantia of Loue, and not to ſæke her: againe burſt forth into teares, whereon he tooke occaſion to ſay, Selia, I perceiue ſuſpition is the cauſe of your diſquiet: Therefore to ſhew what little cauſe you haue to vſe me ſo, doe but ſay what I ſhall doe to this diſhonourable Lady, and I will performe it. Conſtantia then began to feare ſome miſchiefe was neare her, which might eaſily haue bæn perceiued by the oft change of her countenance: who made this reply. Helyon, if thy Mæne knew how much I diſdained thæ, ſuch motions of ſuſpect for me, would not diſquiet her: For I contemne thy baſe diſpoſitions, which is ready to alter with the blaſt of euery inconſtant winde. Or Selia doeſt thou thinke that my minde will ſtoupe to his baſe luſt, or become Concubine to ſo degene-

rate a wretch, and to thy Husband? No, I will rather see thy bodie torne into pieces, and suffer the cruellest misery in the World: he threatned me with terrible speeches, but his Cowards hart is not of courage to execute his detested will. Therefore thou that peraduenture art of a more hardy and inhumane disposition, commest to encourage him to mischiefe: doe the worst you can both, for I feare you not, but would gladly be ridde out of this miserable life. And ridde thou shalt sonne be (said Selia) notwithstanding thy counterfeit dissimulation, thinking with disdainefull speeches to colour thy wickednes: I am glad come to be reuenged on thee, that crossest my content, and first shall that Bastard feele the smart of thy wrath: then catching the Child out of the cradle where it lay, she held the same by the Heeles in the one hand, and the knife in the other, ready to depriue it of life, vntill Helyon withheld her, and Constantia sayd, Nay, Let her murther it, and let her selfe be the first that will repent it: yet first view it well, and see if it resemble not the Father that standeth by: I assure thee it is his, and that thou shalt sonne know.

But vpon this (sayd Helion) I defie thee. With that Selia viewed it well, and perceiued that it resembled him perfectly, wherewith we cast the same on the Earth, saying: Did you bring me hither to doe me this intollerable wrong? Shall I suffer my selfe to be thus abused, and liue to endure perpetuall discontent? The Peers of this Land shall vnderstand the wrongs I sustaine, and if none else, mine owne hands shall worke reuenge. Constantia then said, Selia, take vp the Infant, and cherish it, for it is thine owne: My childe by this time is conueyed farre enough from thy power, by Palia, who pitying my distresse, and scorning to be subiect to the base Pride, hath enterchanged one for the other, leauing thine with mee, and carrying my Infant into Assyria, vnto the King Persicles, who is Father thereof, who I doe not doubt, will sonne reuenge the wrong is done to me: Neither doe thou iealously suspect me for that degenerate Knight thy Husband: for thee that is Daughter to the King of Persia, scorneth to be thy Corriuall: If I had dealt vnfaithfully with him, then might he worthily haue inflicted this punishment vpon me: but his owne Conscience knoweth I allwayes refused to yeild to loue him, my Loue being before vowed to the King of Assyria. Both of them were amazed at her speeches, Selia with haste taking vp her sonne,

that

that lay ſprawling at her feet, almoſt halfe dead with crying: and Helyon after a deepe ſtudy, ſaying: Conſtantia, I perceiue thou knoweſt not how vnable the King of Aſſyria is to redeeme thee from hence, being lately diſpoſſeſt of his Crowne by the King of Armenia, and by the Treaſon of his owne Subiects, being himſelfe driuen to liue in obſcurity. Therefore this will I doe in ſatisfaction of my mind againſt thee: thou ſhalt neuer depart from hence, but in this Cloyſter end thy life, vnleſſe the moſt valiantest Knight in the World redeeme thee: for ſuch a ſure Guard will I ſet ouer thee, as ſhall be ouercome by none. Conſtantia was no whit grieued to heare that Doome of her Impriſonment, but onely the ſuſpect ſhe had of his ſpeeches of Periſicles, ouercame her heart with ſuch feare, that ſhe fell downe into a deadly trance: Thoſe that were about her, hauing much adoe to recouer her. Wherewith they left her: Helyon giuing commaund that moſt diligent ſearch ſhould be made for Palia, through the whole Countrey of Arabia.

CHAP. IX.

How *Helyon* built an Enchanted Tower, and put *Conſtantia* therein. How he was impriſoned therein himſelfe in great miſery, by the Enchantreſſe *Sia*.

Within ſoure Dayes after, Helyon purpoſing to effect that which he had vowed, calling all the cunningſt Workemen of his Land before him, asking their aduice, about building a Caſtle of inuincible ſtrength: which they promiſed him to perfoorme: and ſo began to Worke, ſituating the ſame vpon a Rockie hill of exceading largeneſs, that was encompaſſed with a Lake of exceeding depth. Firſt encompaſſing the circuit of the ground, with a wall framed of the hardeſt Marble, of ſuch ſmoothnes without, and heigh', that it was not to be aſcended Ouer the Lake they framed a Bridge of exceading beauty, placing at the entrance two Porches or Fortifications: betwixt them ſetting a Gate of Braſſe, curiouſly wrought, with carued images of Lyons, being the Armes of Arabia,

On the midſt thereof placed a Draw-bridge, drawne vp by ſuch deuices, as the labour of one man was able to doe the ſame with ſpeed.

At the further end of the Bridge, was their builded a moſt curious wrought Gate-houſe, garniſhed with ſtones of ſundry colours, and exceeding ſtrange: The entrance thereto was another Gate of Braſſe, farre exceeding the firſt, for beauty, bigneſſe, and ſtrength, in the midſt aboue the top thereof, were placed in the carued forme of ſix Golden Lyons of exceeding bignes, whoſe proportion might be diſcerned farre off. Within this Porch was there a large Court, encompaſſed round with Turrets, Walls, and Fortifications: within the compaſſe whereof, an Army of Souldiers might lye Encamped. The next Entrance, was three gates of Braſſe, carued like the other two: ouer which was built a Tower of wonderfull Beauty and workmanſhip, framed of Adamant, cut out and carued into the forms of ſorts of Beaſts, Trees, Hearbs, and Fowles: the beauty whereof, would haue held the beholder in admiration: on the tops whereof, were built foure Pinacles in a Squadrant, whoſe glittering Mainos and carued worke, ſhone againſt the Sunne, as if the ſame had beene framed of beaten Gold. Within this Tower, was there a Court, encompaſſed round about with moſt rich and ſtately Buildings, hauing ſeuerall doores into euery building of an inuincible ſtrength, framed all of one proportion, guilded ouer with Gold. The Windowes of an exceeding largenes and beauty: ſupported by two Lyons of carued Alliablaſter, guilded ouer with Gold: On the top next to the Gueſts two Cherubs ſtanding in forme of Angels, of carued Gold, ſupporting the Picture of a beautifull Lady: the Windowes diſcouering the exceeding richneſſe of the Chambers within. In the midſt of this Court, was framed a cleare Fountaine, with diuers ſtreames of water, ſpringing from the ſame, curiouſly carued, and guilded ouer with Gold: the brightneſſe glittering ſuch a reflection of the Sunnes beames round about, that at the firſt entrance it would haue dazeled the beholders eyes.

At the further end of this Court was there a Hall of exceeding largenes, ſupported within, with Pillars of Geate, beſet with ſtones of ſundry colours, and exceeding richnes, the Skreene being framed of the moſt curious worke of carued-Wood: the Roofe of Stone, wherein were coloured out the formes of all kinds of Fruits: the

Walls

Walls hung with Rich Hangings of Arras, containing the Hiſtories of the Warres of Troy. In the midſt of this Hall, was faſtned two Pillars, whereto were chained two Lyons of huge bignes, and wonderfull ſtrength, denying any farther Entrance. The farther end of the Hall, was without any Wall at all, ſupported by Pillars of the ſame Geate, lying open into a Garden of exceeding largeneſſe, which at the firſt entrance into the Hall was gloriouſly diſcerned. In which were made Walks of Pleaſure, Arbors, borders of Flowers, the formes of all things cut out in Pearbs: Flowers to delight the Eye, pleaſe the ſmell, and of ſtrange formes, and all things ſo curiouſly wrought, as was ſtrange to behold. In the midſt of this Garden, ſtood a Banqueting-houſe of round proportion, the foundation ſupported by 4. Lyons of carued blew Stone, called Ayres: The Windowes round about that encompaſſed the ſame, through which the Light paſſed clearely paſſed without impediment: the Pillars, Aſements, and other proportions of ſuch excellent workmanſhip, that it ſeemed to be altogether framd of Chriſtall. On the top of this houſe ſtood the forme of an Angell framed of beaten Gold, pointing with his finger towards the other Lodgings of wonderfull rich Building. At the farther end of the Garden, the deſcription whereon is hereafter ſet down. When Helyon had finiſhed this worke, he called vnto him, one called Penthraſus, an ancient profeſſor of Necromancy, and with him alone, went vnto the Pallace, ſhewing the ſame, and why he had built it, deſiring his Counſell and aid to the performance of his Will.

Penthraſus deſirous likewiſe to practiſe his Art, which before he durſt not doe, for by the Lawes of the Land, the ſame was puniſhed with death. Which now he thought none durſt contradict, becauſe the King was conſenting thereto: Promiſed by his Art, to make the ſame ſo inuincible, that it ſhould neuer be ouercome by ſtrength nor policy. Then did he adviſe the King to bring Conſtantia thither, and two Damzels to attend her, attiring her with moſt Rich Ornaments. When the King had performed this, and delinered her to Penthraſus: taking a Condition of him, that none but himſelfe ſhould be offred to haue entrance there, he departed, leaning her there to be entertained of Penthraſus: who led her into the Caſtle appointing her Damzels where they ſhould haue all things neceſſary: and withall, telling her that it ſhould be many yeers before ſhe ſhould

be delinered. After he had placed her there, he beganne to caſt about for to Fortifie the ſame: And firſt by his Art, he found that there lived in the Deſert of Arabia, two mighty Giants of vnwonted proportion, and huge ſtrength, whom hee found out, caſting ſuch a bewitched Charme vpon them, that they preſently followed him vnto the Caſtle, which he afterwards named Penthraſus Pallace: by his Charmes and Spells, binding them to keepe the firſt entrance of the Bridge, and by his Sorceries guarding euery entrance in ſuch ſtrong ſort, as it was impoſſible to be ouercome. When he had performed euery thing according to his minde, hee brought thither his Wife, named Ila, determined to ſpend the reſt of his life there. Within few yeares he fell ſicke, and by his Art found the date of his life to be nigh an end. Whereupon he went vnto the Oracle of the Heſperian Nymphs in the Deſart, which he was ſtrictly enioyned vnto by a Viſion, which he ſaw in his ſleepe, to know what he ſhould determine as concerning thoſe charmes, he had ſet vpon the Caſtle: Whoſe anſwere was this;

Penthraſus, becauſe by thine Art thou haſt not attempted any wicked Action, and to diſcloſe the Deſtinies, many a Knight of ſundry ſtrange Countries ſhall heare of the beauty of Conſtantia, and ſhall come to try their Aduentures to ſet her at Liberty, but yet none ſhall performe it: neither ſhall it be Reuealed, that ſhee is Daughter to the King of Perſia: vntill ſhee be releaſed by the valour of her owne Sonne. The manner and meanes how, is as yet hidden and vnrevealed: vntill which time, Ila ſhall liue, and by our Directions gouerne the Caſtle, vntill the Enchantments be ended. Penthraſus hauing receiued his Anſwer, returned home, and within few dayes dyed.

Thus was Conſtantia encloſed, enioying all the Delights her heart could deſire, but nothing could comfort her, but the Remembrance of Perſicles, for whoſe abſence ſhe liued in continuall ſorrow.

Helyon kept that which he had done concerning Conſtantia, from the Knowledge of Selia, determining neuer to ſee her againe: but within ſhort time, ſuch diſcord beganne betwixt him and Selia, that by meanes thereof, the whole Court was in an vproare, and he found ſuch diſquiet with her, that then he began to hate her, abandon her company, and began exceedingly to dote with remembrance of

Con-

Conſtantia: repenting him of the euill he had done her: and reſoluing againe to ſet her at Liberty, or elſe to obtaine of Penthraſus, to liue for euer with her in the Caſtle: and by extraordinary meanes to attaine her Loue. And vpon a time he rode thither, determining to haue a ſight of her: Where when he came, he found the Gate at the entrance of the Bridge faſt ſhut, and nothing but a Horne hanging thereat, faſtned to a Chaine, which he Winded: and with that one of the Giants came forth, with whoſe ſight he ſtood affrighted till he asked him what he ſought? I would (ſaid Helyon) ſpeake with Penthraſus: With that the Gyant bad him come in, and ſhutting faſt the Entrance, brought him before Ila, who preſently knew him, ſaying: I know the cauſe of thy comming, which thou ſhalt neuer obtaine: For which diſloyall thought, and other ignoble deeds, thou ſhalt neuer depart from hence, vntill the Lady thou cauſedſt to be incloſed here, be ſet at Liberty: With that, not ſuffering him to replie, ſhe cauſed him to be bound, and carried into a darke Dungeon, where he was hardly Dyetted, and worſe intreated.

Ila hauing him in her cuſtodie, knowing that none elſe was priuie to Conſtantiaes being there, cauſed theſe Verſes to be written in Letters of Gold, and hung ouer the outtermoſt Gate, and by the ſame, Conſtantiaes Picture, whereon ſhe had caſt ſuch a Spell, that all that beheld it, were in Loue with it.

The Verſes were theſe,

Within this Caſtle is inclos'd
The Daughter of a King:
Whoſe Beautie caus'd a Traytour fell
Her from her Countrey bring.
Here muſt ſhe bide, vntill a Knight
By ſword doth ſet her Free:
And by his valour end the date,
Of crooked Deſtinie.
The World ſhall Fame him for that deede,
And great ſhall be his gaine:
Her laſting Loue ſhall he enioy,
That rids her out of paine.

When

When Ila had written theſe Verſes, and placed them vnder the Picture, ſhe withdrew herſelfe into the Caſtle, ſtaying the comming of the firſt Knight for the Aduenture.

CHAP. X.

What befell to *Palia*, how ſhee was deuoured by Wilde Beaſts. How the young Infant was found by a Ladie, who cheriſhed him, and afterwards named him *Montelion*.

NOw returne wee to ſpeake of Palia, and what befell to the Infant. After ſhe had trauelled out of Arabia, reſolning with a faithfull heart, to execute what ſhe had vndertaken, and attained to the bounds of Aſiria, ſhe ſoone vnderſtood theſe euill Newes of the Armenians victorie: whereby ſhe was aſſured, it would be in vayne to ſeeke Perſicles there: and therefore ſhe returned towards Perſia, intending to follow Conſtantia's directions to find him: but being wearied with continuall trauelling, ſhe ſat herſelfe downe vpon a Mountaine, ſtanding in a waſte and Deſolate place: on the top whereof, grew a tuft of Trees that ſhadowed her from the heate of the Sunne: where ſhe had not long reſted, but the Boy fell faſt aſleepe, and ſhe being very hungry, began to ſeeke for Fruit, no other foode being their to be gotten, leauing him vpon the Mount. Palia, wandring into the Thicket by misfortune was deuoured of a Lyon: and ſo the poore Infant left ready to be deſtroyed: but the Deſtenies that had allotted him to better fortune, thus preſerued him. Not farre off, there dwelt an ancient Knight named Cothanes, who with his Lady, the ſame day had been Hunting, and now ſhe being weary of the ſport, with two ſeruants in her companie, chanced to alight at the very place where the Babe lay: who by that time awaked, and miſſing his Nurſe began to cry. The Lady hearing the noyſe, ſearched among the Trees, and preſently found the Child, which ſhe tooke vp in her armes, commanding one of her ſeruants to take vp a bundle of cloathes that lay by the ſame, and to winde his Horne, that Cothanes hearing it, might come vnto them:

who

Who according to her deſire came, asking what was the matter? You haue (ſaid ſhe) all this day hunted after wilde beaſts, and loſt your labour, but I haue found a richer prize, yet by what misfortune left in this place I knew not: With that they both viewed the Child, well noting his exceeding beauty, and ſweet countenance, with great joy carrying him home: by the way naming him Montelyon: finding in the fardell many rich Iewels, and a faire Embroydered ſcarffe, whereby they knew him to be of no meane birth: educating him carefully, and after he was come to knowledge, teaching him many commendable and vertuous qualities. When he came to the age of fourteene yeares, Cothanes taught him how to ride and manage a horſe, taking him forth with him many times on hunting, delighting wonderfully in his forwardnes. Wherein he ſhewed ſuch aptneſſe, that he could not offer to teach him any thing but he ſoone grew to be as perfect therein as himſelfe. Whom we will leaue to be Educated by Cothanes, and returne to ſpeake of Perſicles: and what befell to him after the loſſe of Conſtantia.

Chap. XI.

How *Piſor* being recovered, perſwaded *Perſicles* to crave ayde of the King of *Perſia*, againſt his Enemies: How he obtained the ſame, and carried a mighty Hoſt into *Aſſiria*, which was there overthrowne.

After that Perſicles had in heauines and ſorrow wandred vp and downe thoſe Woods, the ſpace of three moneths, and Piſor again come to his remembrance: Vpon a time they both met, Piſor ſaluting him with great reuerence. Perſicles ſeing he was come to his right ſences againe, asked him what became of Conſtantia? My Lord (qd. he) I found her in the Shepheards houſe, telling her you would preſently returne, but when ſhe ſaw you ſtay ſo long, vnawares to me, ſhe went out of the Cottage to ſeeke you: I ſoone miſſing her, thought to ouertake her, to direct her vnto the place where I left you, and by misfortune taſted of that Ominous fruit. Then ſaid Perſicles, ſhe is aſſuredly deuoured by wilde

Beasts, and I shall never see her againe. My misfortunes exceeding the bounds of common miseries: that I would to God I had ended mine owne life when I was first borne, then should not both Assiria, and Persia have had such cause of discontent.

My Lord (quoth Pisor) I cannot be perswaded that she is dead, but by some misfortune wandred out of knowledge, or carried hence by some unexpected meanes: Therefore I beseech you beare her losse with patience, and in the end I doe not doubt but you shall heare of her safety. Thou giuest me words full of comfort (sayd he) but thou hast no ground for them: Nor can I tell how by them to adde any hope of my restlesse passions: for that she is lost I am sure, but that I shall euer see her againe, I thinke it impossible: being driuen to so hard an exigent of extremity, that I neither know what to doe, nor whose ayde to implore. Thou seest another hath shut me from my Kingdome, and in my absence wonne my subjects hearts from me. The King of Persia, hearing of the wrong done to him, will become mine Enemie, and then is there no place of refuge left for me but in this place be best fitting my miserie. My Lord (said Pisor,) yet if I may be so bolde as counsell you, let vs goe to the Persian Court, I as I am, and you in that disguise, for none but your sister Piera, being priuie to your escape with Constantia, you may safely and without fears goe thither, both to conferre with Piera, and to craue the Persians assistance to establish you in your Kingdome.

Persicles unwilling to leaue those woods where he was, determined to dwell for euer there: But finding no hope thereby to recouer Constantia, and also being perswaded by Pisor, he condiscended to goe with him, and thereupon immediately departed. When they approached neare to the Court, Pisor rode on before, and entring the Court, he soone found Piera declaring to her the misfortune that was befallen to Persicles and Constantia: and how that he was without the Court, staying vntill he returned, to know whether he might with safety come to speake with her, or no? Piera then presently sent for him by Pisor, and other of her Knights, who brought him into the Court, whither he was Welcommed by her, with great Ioy: With whom he continued some time in priuate Conference. Piera counselling him to discouer himselfe to the King of Persia, and to craue his ayde against the Armenians, who would readily assist him.

him: Wherof she told him, he needed not to doubt, for that he had euer beene his Friend, nor knew not of his escape with Constantia, which none but her selfe and Dela were priuy vnto.

Whilest they continued in this conference, Deloratus came in, and espying one in such priuate with his Wife in that disguise, wondred who it should be. Piera soone espyed him, and leauing her Brother went to him, and told him who it was: Wherewith he Embraced Pericles in his Armes, now perfectly remembring him, although griefe had much altered him. After many speaches past, Deloratus, he, and Piera, went to the King of Persia, who knowing him, welcommed him, with exceeding kindnes. Pericles then vnfolded his Misfortunes vnto him, and desired his assistance, in reuenge of the wrongs the Armenians had done him. Which the King of Persia willingly yelded vnto him: giuing authority vnto Deloratus to muster Souldiers, and make prouision for their expedition. The newes hereof was suddenly rumoured in the Court, and many thousands of Knights vnconstrained, prepared to ayde Pericles, whom they honoured for his exceeding valour and courtesie: purposing to spend their liues in his Defence: that of a sudden one part of the Countrey was vp in Armes, and a great Force was assembled, and conducted into Assyria, by Deloratus, and Pericles, and Pisor, and Osimus, and also many other Knights of exceeding valor: Of whose worthy Exployts, we will hereafter speake more at large.

Pericles had such ill successe, that after he had continued a long time in Assyria, yet he so little preuailed, that he was compelled thrice to flye backe into Persia to renew his Forces. These cruell Warres continued many yeares, the King of Armenia, defending himselfe, and keeping possession of the Crowne, notwithstanding the Persian Forces.

Deloratus perceiuing that the long continuance of those Warres had wasted a number of his subiects, and yet notwithstanding Pericles was so farre from possession of his right, as at the first beginning of those tedious Warres, determined to giue ouer: and therefore assembled together such as were the chiefest Rulers ouer the Hoast, to know their opinion, what further to determine. Who with a generall consent, perswading him once againe to renew his Forces, and if that then they did not preuaile, neuer more to giue the Onset.

CHAP. XII.

How *Perſicles* Army was renewed. And how *Montelyon*, being denyed by his ſuppoſed Father, ſtole to the Campe. And how he preſerved *Perſicles* life. How *Cothanes* knew him, and diſcovered what he knew of his Birth. And how he received Knighthood at *Perſicles* hand.

PErſicles ſeing how ready Deloratus was to ſhrinke away from him, being himſelfe wearied with that tedious Warre, went likewiſe with reſolution, eyther then to end his life, or euer after to abandon the company of all men, and end his dayes in ſolitarineſſe: Deloratus therefore ſent Meſſengers into Perſia, to muſter new Forces, who in ſhort time returned, that the Perſian Campe was full foureſcore thouſand ſtrong. Amongſt the reſt, it ſo fortuned that Cothanes (being in Youth accounted a man of great valour, and now being ſomewhat growne in yeares, of great Experience) determined not to giue his mind to ſloth, being touched with griefe, to heare what a number of his Country-men were ſlaine: therefore told his Lady what he intended: who with teares and many intreaties diſſwaded him, but all could not preuaile, his heart was ſo fully ſet thereon,

Montelyon being now growne to mans eſtate, hearing thereof, entreated Cothanes (whom he eſteemed to be his Father, and ſo called him) that he might goe with him: but Cothanes would by no meanes conſent thereto: the rather, for that his Lady moſt earneſtly requeſted him, that if it were ſo that he would needs goe himſelfe, yet that he would not leaue her altogether comfortles, by taking Montelyon with him. Therefore all his intreaties nothing preuayled, but of neceſſity he was enforſt to ſtay. Cothanes being departed, Montelyon continued ſome two dayes exceedingly penſiue, ſo much troubled in his thoughts, with griefe to be left behind, that he refuſed his meate: and notwithſtanding the manifold kindneſſes his ſuppoſed Mother vſed him withall, yet he thought all things troubleſome. Which deſire ſo much preuailed with him, that furniſhing himſelfe with

with good ſtore of Coyne, ſecretly one Night he conueyed his Steed without the Caſtle Walles: and when all thought he had bin in his Chamber, he was departed. By that time it was day he approched neare the City of Helotos, where he ſtayed ſome three dayes, vntill he had furniſhed himſelfe with Armour, which he cauſed a Workman to frame of exceeding pure Lydian ſteele, bearing this Deuiſe. His Armor Siluer, interſet with the formes of diuers Beaſts and Trees of burniſht Gold. And in his Shield, a naked Man amongſt a tuft of Trees: Which deuiſe he cauſed to be made of purpoſe, to be knowne different from the reſt.

Hauing furniſhed himſelfe in this ſort, he left the City, and iourneyed toward the Perſian Campe in Aſſyria: Where he was no ſooner come, but he found the Battels ioyned in moſt cruell fight, and a number of Souldiers on both ſides ſlaine, lying couered and beſmeared in Blood: Some with their Swords faſt graſped in their hands threatning: Others with a hideous noyſe breathing forth their lateſt gaſps: then in the Campe beheld he ſome flying, others purſuing: ſome ſtanding faſt in cruell Conflict: others with fierce terror flying thoſe that was next them: Some with hideous cryes, animating their followers: Others with feare, crying retire. Here did he behold both Perſians and Armenians, intermingled ſlaughtering each other. Wherewith he a while ſtood as one amazed, hauing neuer before beheld ſuch cruell Conflicts: At laſt he beheld a moſt gallant Knight, with his Sword drawne, and all couered with blood, hurling vp and downe amongſt the Armenians: performing admirable deeds of Chiualrie, but at laſt encompaſſed with ſuch a multitude of his Enemies, that he knew it was impoſſible for him to eſcape. Which ſight, ſtirred vp ſuch ſparks of courage and deſire to ſuccour him, that his heart vging him to more forwardnes then his Steed could performe: and yet his Steed with furious pace, running as ſwift as might be, rusht in amongſt the thickeſt of them: At the firſt piercing his Lance through the bodies of two that were oppoſite before him: and his Steed with his vnſtayed courſe, ouerthrowing others, and treading them downe vnder his Feet: then drawing his Sword, whoſe brightneſſe dazeled the ſight of ſuch as beheld it, vntill he had darkened the Splendor with their purple blood: mangling, ſlaughtering, and deſtroying ſuch as withſtood his

paſſage: vntill he approached the Perſian Knight, who without his approach, had there ended his life: But finding himſelfe at more liberty, by the aſſiſtance of this new-come Gallant, he againe redoubled his abated Courage, joyning themſelues both together, performing ſuch honoured Valor, as by their onely reſiſtance, the thronged multitudes of Armenians diſperſt themſelues, every one haſting to get without their reach. Now the Knight that Montelyon had reſcued, was the Noble King Perſicles, who ſeing how valiantly this New-come Gallant had reſcued him, and preſerued his life, ſaid thus vnto him. Noble Knight, thy Valor hath preſerued me: For which Perſicles will not be vngratefull. And if thou beſt a friend to me, as thou haſt alreadye ſhowne, ſecond me, and I will once againe try my Fortune. With that Montelyon held vp his hand, in ſigne he gaue conſent. Then Perſicles with ſpeed haſted into the foremoſt of the Battell, and Montelyon followes, making ſuch way, as none durſt to reſiſt them, but they dyed. Where they found Deloratus, Piſor, Oſimus, Cothanes, and a number of gallant Knights in combat, beſet with odes, but that diſadvantage was ſome turned to advantage, by their approach: for there did Montelyon performe ſuch deeds of excelling Valor, as made the whole Perſian and Armenian Hoſts admire him. Then began the Perſians to gather new courage to aſſaile their enemies, continuing the skirmiſh with equall ſtrength, againſt them. Palian the vſurping K. of Aſſyria, thinking to haue the aduantage againſt the Perſians, as in times paſt they had, called the chiefeſt Rulers to him, exhorting them to courage to reſiſt their enemies. Vpon whoſe exhortation, the Armenians with vndaunted courage followed the battell on all ſides with great eagerneſs, that the Perſian Gouernours were enforced to flye to their Companies, to encourage them to reſiſtance, only Montelyon and Perſicles ſtill kept together, making thouſands of the Armenians pay their liues for tribute to their conquering Swords: Whilſt they continued the fight in the fore-front of the Battell, they ſuddenly heard a cry on the outſide of the battell, with which noyſe, Montelyon not regarding to be counſelled, ſet ſpurs to his Horſe, and haſted thither, where he found Deloratus, though to him vnknowne, in the throng of a multitude of Armenians, vnhorſed, and fighting on foot, ſo ſore wounded, and againſt ſuch ods, that he was ready to faint, and by force to be taken: Amongſt whom

whom, Montelyon rushed with such fury, spoyling them, that he succoured Deloratus, and having againe with the helpe of some of his owne Knights set him on Horse-backe, sent him to his Tent with a sufficient Guard: and returning againe towards Persicles, he espyed Cothanes his Father, whom he knew by his Armour, unhorst, and newly by force taken prisoner, but before they could convey him from thence, Montelyon began so cruell a fight, that with the losse of many of theyr lives, he set him at liberty. Then began the Armenians somewhat to retire, having such a number of them slaine, and finding theyr enemies pursue them so fiercely, that Palyon perceived the Persians would that day be conquerors: yet notwithstanding calling to him two Knights, the one named Altheus, the other Preton, who were most renowned of all the Armenians, he said to them, Joyne with me, and let us once againe repell these fainted harted Persians: With that, they three with a multitude of their chiefest soldiours, kept a head together, and fronted the battell where Persicles fought, Palion knowing him, with a Lance ready couched ran at him, which lighted upon his Shield, where it burst in pieces, not once piercing the well tempered Steele. Then both Palion, Altheus and Preton, all at once assailed him, whom Persicles resisted with exceeding valour, continuing so long as any Knight could possible doe: But at last the odds being so great, he was driven onely to defend their swift blowes, that were followed with eagernes: then began he to wish for the Strange Knight, that had all that day succored him, expecting nothing but death. By this time Montelion had rescued Cothanes, and again got him Horse and weapon, which done he left him, and even at that time that Persicles wisht for him, came, espying three knights assailing him alone, eyming his sword point at Petrons breast, who was next him, and running at him with all the force his horse could make, ran the same through his body, and with the like intent, eyming the same at Palion, he ran at him, that had he not annoyed his Encounter, he had either slaine, or sore wounded him, but missing, he let drive at him with his sword with such force, that in short space he gave him many wounds Persicles likewise having none but Altheus to resist, Combated with him bravely, who with like valour resisted him: In the end Palion finding himselfe so ouermatcht, began to retire, which Montelion perceyving, gave him no respit to flye.

Then was theyr Battle most terrible to beholde, the Persians com-

comforted by the only valour of Montelyon, ran vpon their Enemies with vnreſiſted fury. And the Armenians ſeeing one of their chiefe Champions dead, and their Generall retire, were amazed: and rather ready to flye then to ſtand out: which animated their Foes with courage to purſue them, euen as long as the day laſted.

Montelyon ſtill purſued Paiion, in whoſe Reſcue many of his Knights interſet themſelues, and dyed by his Sword: and notwithſtanding he withdrew himſelfe, yet Montelyon followed him ſo neare, that he often put him in danger of his life: vntill he was ſo farre paſt in amongſt their Troupes, that he was compelled with his Sword to make his way to get out againe. In which Retyre, many of the Armenians dyed.

The Night now drawing nigh, whileſt the Armenians ſound Retrayt, and the Perſian Generals buſie in gathering together their ſcattered Followers, Montelyon had time to conſider what was beſt for him to doe, and whether it were conuenient to diſcouer himſelfe or no: at laſt, determining to depart in ſecret, he eſpyed Perſicles hard by him, who of purpoſe had watched him, miſdoubting that which he intended, who came vnto him, and ſayd. Sir Knight, the kindneſſe I haue found in you, emboldneth me to deſire your company, and intreat you to accept of my Tent, to repoſe your ſelfe in. For that I ſuppoſe you are a Stranger, and it were inconuenient for you to Journey after ſo great labour, hauing this day with ſuch Honour defended me, that I account my ſelfe yours, and my life preſerued by your onely Valor. Therefore deny me not, that I may in ſome ſort requite your kindneſſe.

Montelyon hauing heard Cothanes oftentimes exceedingly commend the King for Valour and curteſie, likewiſe hauing knowledge how to behaue himſelfe, as well to the meaneſt as to the greateſt perſonages, being by Cothanes nobly educated, and of his owne Inclination more apt to conceiue, then they are able to inſtruct, knowing it to be the King himſelfe, bowing his body, ſayd: Moſt honoured King, I am vnfit the honour you proffer me, and my deſerts no way deſerning the commendations you giue them: therefore I beſeech you, not to attribute to me more then is befitting my meane eſtate, but rather licence me to attend you, in all humble duty: My Life and all vttermoſt endeuors, being vowed to be ſpent in

your

your ſeruice, and my ſelfe ready to be at your diſpoſition. This ſaid Perſicles and he departed into the Campe, whether they were welcommed with, the ſhoutes and reioycing of the Perſian Souldiers. Deloratus hearing that applaud, came forth of his tent to ſee what was the cauſe thereof, and eſpying Perſicles and the ſtrange Knight together, came vnto them, they both alighting to ſalute him. Deloratus would by no meanes ſuffer them to depart, but intreated them to lodge in his Tent that night, which Perſicles could not deny: and therefore taking Montelyon in kinde ſort betweene them, they entred the ſame, where he was vnarmed: but when they beheld his youth, they wondred thereat, to be accompanied with ſuch exceeding valour, both Deloratus and Perſicles vſing him with great kindneſſe. Then preſently the principall Commanders of the Campe, aſſembled themſelues to their Generals tents, to know what they did determine. Amongſt the reſt was Cothanes, who at the firſt entrance into the Tent, eſpyed his ſonne Montelyon, his head being onely diſarmed, & by his armour knowing it was he that had ſo honourably preſerued his life, and defended himſelfe: had much a doe to containe himſelfe from reioycing: likewiſe Montelyon ſeeing him, vpon his knee entreated him to pardon his boldneſſe in comming to the Campe without his conſent. Cothanes with great ioy tooke him vp, and imbraced him. Perſicles ſeeing that ſaid to Cothanes, Why friend is this thy ſonne? My Lord ſayd he, he is my ſonne, and he calleth me father, and yet I am vnworthy to be father to ſuch a ſonne, that hath this day ſhowne himſelfe rather to be the ſonne of ſome heroicke King. And my Lord, becauſe his worthineſſe ſhall not be darkened with the ignoble Title of Cothanes ſonne. I will declare to you all that I know of him. Indeed he is not my ſonne, but my Lady and I being one day hunting, found him vpon the top of a Mount in ſwadling clothes: which were ſuch, as ſhewed he was not of meane parentage, but of honourable race: his Nurſe as it ſhould ſeeme, being diſtreſſed for want of food, was wandred from him, whoſe carkaſſe and clothes were found not farre off, deſtroyed by a Lyon: ſince which time, with carefulneſſe I haue brought him vp eſteeming him as mine owne ſonne. This my Lord, in briefe is the whole ſumme of all that I know of him. They all marvelled at his words, eſpecially Montelyon was ſtricken into ſuch a ſudden

preditation, that for a while ſtood like one metamorphoſed, Perſicles taking him by the hand, ſaid: Although I know not what title to giue you, yet borne you cannot be leſſe then of noble bloud, as may well appeare by the manifeſt tokens of your heroick diſpoſitions: therefore remit the care of that vntill hereafter, and vouchſafe to ſtay with vs, who are now both comforted with your preſence, and beene preſerued by your valour. My Lord (replyed Montelion) were my deſire a thouſand times greater then it is, yet the deſire I haue to doe you ſeruice, would ſurmount the ſame, being in the depth of inward affection, loue and duty wholly addicted, and entirely deuoted to your worthineſſe, which no deſire of reward, hope of praiſe, or worldly reſpect hath bred in me, but onely the inſtinct of nature, that hath effectually engraffed the ſame in my heart: therefore I humbly deſire you vouchſafe to entitle mé with the honour of knighthood: wherewith if I be dignified by your vertuous hand, I ſhall both remaine with you, and endeauour to deſerue the ſame. Perſicles highly eſteeming him, and kindly imbracing him, told him he ſhould that night be his bedfellow, and the next day haue his deſire. With many other ſpeeches they ended that nights conference: euery Ruler departing with carefulneſſe to ſet the Watches.

CHAP. XIII.

How the Armenians army with exceeding loſſe was diſcomfited.

EArely the next morning, Deloratus, Perſicles, Cothanes, and all the reſt of the chiefe Commanders of the Perſian Army, were aſſembled, who gaue order, that euery battell ſhould be planted in ſuch ſort, as if they expected a preſent aſſault, which being performed. Montelyon in great triumph was brought into the field, and by Perſicles inueſted with the order of Knighthood: which when he had receiued, the ſouldiers gaue ſuch ſhoutes, as made the ayre reſound with their Ecchoes. The Armenians hearing the noyſe, could not iudge what might be the cauſe thereof: ſome cenſuring one thing, ſome another. Palian fretting with exceeding vexation at the laſt daies diſcomfiture, which went the nearer his heart, for that in all the time of warres, he had not endured the like, called vnto him the chiefeſt knights in his Camp which were

All the-

Altheſus, Golgron, Mulatus, and Lamdelyon, Knights of Honourable birth, great wiſdome, and appointed valour, uttering to them his hearts griefe, and his earneſt deſire of revenge, deſiring them with all ſpeed to counſell him which way to ſuppreſſe the Perſians courage, onely reuiued with the ayde the ſtrange knight had brought them. Amongſt whom it was agreed, & generally held beſt, to ſurprize them at vnawares in the middeſt of their ioy: that with all ſpeed, and as ſpeedily as might be they detained their Foyces, and without the noyſe of eyther Drum or Fife, iſſued the City gates. Certaine Perſian Spyes perceiuing their intent, poſted to the Campe, and certified their Generall thereof, who gaue commandement that without making any kind of ſuſpicion, they ſhould continue their mirth, ſo that thereby the Armenians might be heartned, to their owne deſtruction. Montelyon with a company of Horſemen departed out of the Campe, a contrary way to that the Armenians came, with intent to get betwixt them and the City, which afterwards ſorted to effect. The Armenians thinking to make a ſudden ſlaughter of them, and nothing at all ſuſpecting their readineſſe to receiue them with careleſſe haſt approached the Campe, with greedy deſire of conqueſt running vpon their Enemies. Whom they found in ſuch orderly ſort, ready to welcome them, that within an houres ſpace they wiſht themſelues againe within the City Wals: To recite euery particular of their Conflict, and with what terror the battell continued, would dull my wits with confuſion. Principally, my penne ſhall barely recite the admirable deeds of the moſt honourable of both Armies. Perſicles conſidering what iuſt cauſe he had and with what equity he might challenge his right, wrongfully detained by his vſurping Foe, bent his Sword point with vnrelenting fury, to the deſtruction of his Enemies, pitying their deaths who dyed by his Sword, ayming the ſame rather at Palians owne heart, then againſt them that were by conſtraint enforced to hazard their deareſt liues. Which when he had coloured and made drunke with many of their deaths bloud, he at laſt met with Palian, whom at the firſt encounter he had ſurely bereft of life, had not his owne Steed by great miſfortune ſtumbled at a dead body, that interrupted his ſteppes, but notwithſtanding his Swords point by that miſchance, miſſing his right ayme, ranne quite through his Steeds

necke, who falling, and Palian with him, both lay groueling on the ground, ready to be troden to death. Mularus being nere at hand, reſcued Palian, and mounted him on his owne Steed, whereby he loſt his owne life: For Perſicles with both his hands fetch ſo full a blow at his head, that with the force thereof, his Armour pelting ſome ſcales thereof, pierced his Braine, and he dyed. Palian for a while continued fight with Perſicles: with euery blow receiuing a deepe wound, vntill he felt himſelfe ſo vnable to hold out, that he muſt eyther yeeld, dye, or retyre: but euen then came Golgron fortunately to his ayde, who with him maintained fight againſt Perſicles: who notwithſtanding that odds, had neare hand brought them both to deſtruction, had he not eſpyed Deloratus and Cothanes in diſtreſſe, who were vnequally aſſailed by fiue valiant Knights, two of them being Altheſus and Lamdelyon, vnto whom he hafted, giuing them ſuccour by the death of the firſt he met.

Whileſt the Battell was maintayned in the Forefront by the chiefe Commanders of both Armyes, and Montelyon with his reſolued Followers, whoſe hearts were enſpired with fiery courage, to be guarded by ſo valiant a guide was gotten behind them, and began ſuch a maſſacre, that multitudes of a ſudaine were ſlaughtered by his approach, whoſe deeds of valour amazed their ſences, with ſuch feare, and abated their courage with ſuch terror, that like as a flocke of fearefull ſheepe, eſpying the approach of a deuouring Lyon, ranne with amazed feare from his pawes: Euen ſo the Armenians fled from the deſtroying hands of Montelyon, filling the empty ayre with ſuch diſmall cryes, that the noyſe thereof amazed the hearts of the ſtoutеſt Armenians: Palian and Golgron then turned their backes, making haſt thitherwards to know the cauſe, Altheſus and Lamdelyon did the like, whileſt Deloratus and Perſicles, and the reſt made ſuch hauocke againſt the common Souldiers, that had the fight continued long, the whole Forces of the Armenian Army had beene deſtroyed.

Palian and Altheſus met Montelyon not knowing him: but ſuppoſing it was he had made ſuch ſlaughter amongſt them the laſt day, both aſſayled him: who in his heart rejoyced that he had met with two ſuch Champions to make tryall of his valour continuing ſo braue a combat againſt them both, as is not to be deſcribed. By

this

this time the cry begamne againe on the contrary ſide, with ſuch hideous noiſe, that Palians heart was affrighted therewith, and defended himſelfe as if a ſlender youth ſhould hold encounter againſt a ſtrong Giant, till both he and Altheius were ſo grieuouſly wounded that it had beene a pittifull ſpectacle to beheld. Both being driuen to retire amongſt their ſcattered Troupes, and with all the haſte they could, to preuent their vtter ouerthrow, to ſound retreat, and with all ſpeed haſte vnto the City, which could not be accounted a retyre, but rather an abſolute flight: for it was done with ſuch haſte, as if they had beene all amazed, none hauing the power to reſiſt: and purſued by Perſicles and Montelyon, with ſuch fury, that their owne hearts relented at their owne hands cruelty, which couered the earth with the dead bodyes of their affrighted foes. The day being thus ended to the terror of the one, and comfort of the other: The Perſians retyred as Victors, and the Armenians halfe mad with griefe, and deſpaire within their Walls, not minding ſodenly to iſſue again. Perſicles and Deloratus honouring Montelyon with their kinde embracings, and the Souldiers applauded their valours with reioycings. Euery one according to the preſent occaſion betooke themſelues to their charges ſpending the time in more ioy and ſecurity, then earſt they had done.

CHAP. XIIII.

How the *Armenians* ſent two Knights into *Armenia* for more ayde, who were met, and one of them taken Priſoner, and of other accidents that befell.

EArely the next morning, Palian aſſembled his Councell to determine what order to take for their ſecurity: which it behoued them to doe for that their Forces were vtterly diſcouraged, and the Country Inhabitants knowing their lawfull King to be liuing, begamne to reuolt, and deuyed to ayde Palian, eyther with men or victuals, that he was conſtrained onely to keepe himſelfe within the City Walles, not ſuffering any to iſſue out, or daring in-

deed to doe it, they were ſo ſtrictly beſieged by the Perſians. When they had well conſidered their eſtates, and the miſery they were likely to fall into, they concluded to ſend into Armenia, to certifie the King, which Altheſus and one Mutellus two Knights of exceeding valour vndertooke to performe the next night. Montelyon, being in his Tent, determining to repoſe himſelfe, yet ſerling no deſire to ſleepe: calling for the Chronicles of the Warres of Antiochus King of Aſſyria, and ſpending ſome houres in reading that Hiſtory, his Squire by his commandement being gone to Bed, about the dead time of Night, he heard the neighing of a Horſe, as it ſeemed to him within the City: again reading and again haying to liſten, his mind being ſomewhat troubled, being as yet in his Armour, he gyrded his Sword to his ſide, determining to walke the round, to ſee how diligently the Watch was kept: whom he found ſleeping as ſoundly as if they had beene in their quiet Beds, marueiling much at their drowſineſſe, but much more at their careleſnes, he went from place to place, not minding that night to ſleepe, but himſelfe would watch for them all. He had not long ſtayed, but he eſpyed two in Armour, with haſty (though ſoftly ſteps) paſſing through the Campe on foote, whom he little ſuſpected to be any other then of his owne company, thinking them to be ſome ſtragiers, that ſeeing their fellowes in dead ſleepe went to robbe: following as cloſely as he could, he perceiued them to depart the Campe, but marueilling thereat, he drew nigher vnto them, entending to know what they were before they departed.

Altheſus and Mutellus eſpying one to follow them, and ſeeing themſelues now without the Campe, purpoſed to lay hold on him, with purpoſe to force him to declare what the Perſians intended to doe: that turning backe to him, Altheſus offered to lay hold on him. Soft quoth Montelyon, let me firſt know what you are? We are enemies vnto thee ſayd Altheſus, and therefore yeild. Tell mee quoth he, your names? Altheſus knowing himſelfe to be of great valour, and therefore not to be vnknowne of any. Beſides, little thinking he would haue reſiſted them, told him his name was Altheſus. Then I defie thee quoth Montelyon, for I am thine Enemy, and will rather dye then yeeld to thee. With that Altheſus drew his Sword, and ſtroke at him. Montelyon did the like to de-

fend

ſend himſelfe: and afterwards they offend him ſo much, that both he and Mutellus had enough to doe to ſaue their owne ſtakes and liues.

Altheſus ſeeing his valour, deſired to know his name, which Montelyon tolde him. Altheſus was much diſquieted therewith: and ſeeing his companion fallen and faint with effuſion of bloud, hee thus ſaid: Knight, at this time I cannot ſtay to end the combat, for by hazarding my ſelfe, I ſhould endanger the liues of many: therefore farewell vntill more conuenient time to meete this againe. With that hee turned his backe, and Montelyon ſtouped to giue his conquered aduerſary breath, which reuiued Mutellus: but ſeeing Altheſus gone, his heart was ready to die with griefe. Montelyon bad him be of comfort, for his intent was to vſe him honorably: with that helping him vp, he ledde him to his Tent, calling vp his Squire to attend him, and diſarme him, he went preſently to Perſicles.

The next day Montelyon cauſed Mutellus to be carried before the Generall, where hee declared the cauſe of their departure towards Armenia, which Perſicles was glad to heare of: that by this foreknowledge he might preuent the purpoſed intent of his enemies: but moſt of all he reioyced and commended Montelyon for this noble act, Which had they not beene diſcouered, might haue brought the whole Campe into great diſtreſſe: by this meanes euery way growing into ſuch loue, and admiration of his valour, vertue and courteſie, that they eſteemed their onely defence and felicity conſiſted in his ſafety: that whereſoeuer hee went, the eyes of multitudes attrayted him, as being delighted to behold him. Mutellus deſired Perſicles to appoint his ranſome, but hee committed that to Montelion, who after he had honourably feaſted him, ſent him ranſomeleſſe to the City. Mutellus ſoone got entrance, and declared what misfortune had befallen him and Altheſus, which turned their conceiued hope of comfort into deſpaire, which had ouercome them with feare, had not ſome little hope of Altheſus eſcape reuiued them.

Thus remained they many dayes within the citty, ſo hardly beſieged, that they were out of all hope in getting Victuals, but were driuen to cutout themſelues with ſpare dyet, ſcantling out

euery

euery ſouldier and inhabitant theyr allowance, which they continued likewiſe ſo long, expecting to heare from Armenia, that being fruſtrated, they expected nothing but miſerable famine: which cauſed them late in the night, to aſſemble all their old, weake and impotent men, vnable to ſerue, and all women and children, except ſome few of account, and turned them out of the Citty, to the number of fifteene thouſand, whoſe diſtreſſed eſtate Perſicles pitied, cauſing them to haue ſufficient foode, themſelues builded Cabins to defend them from the weather.

Perſicles ſeeing the miſerable eſtate his owne Country was in, and to what extremity his ſubiects were brought: by this knowing that Palian was not able long to endure, but that both he and all thoſe within the Citty, were ready to be famiſhed, of whom many were Aſsirians, that were conſtrained to that ſubiection, whoſe eſtate he pitied, being vnwilling to be guilty of theyr deſtruction by the aduiſe and counſell of thoſe he moſt eſteemed, but principally of Deloratus and Montelyon, he ſent a Herauld vnto Palian with this meſſage; that although he did vniuſtly vſurpe his Crowne and many other wayes done him intollerable iniuries, yet pitying the miſerable eſtate he was like to bring the Citizens into by his cruelty, he made him this proffer, that notwithſtanding he might worke ſufficient reuenge by his death, whoſe life was now in this mercy, he ſhould without interruption, with all his Armenians, haue free liberty to depart out of Aſſyria. The Herauld with his meſſage, went into the Citty, declaring the cauſe of his comming. Palian aſſembled his Counſell and returned this anſwere. That what he held, was his right by conqueſt, and that would hold: ſcorning he ſhould ſend any ſuch proffer to him, that was wel able to defend himſelfe, and as little regarded his courteous proffer as his malice: Wiſhing him, not to ſtay long, leaſt his Fathers comming inflicted a greater puniſhment vpon him then he could eſchew. Perſicles was exceedingly vexed with his diſdainefull reply, fearing indeed, that if the Kings forces were once come, it would be a great cauſe to lengthen the warres, which he earneſtly deſired might haue an end, that thereby he might haue reſpite to trauell in ſearch of Conſtantia, for whom his heart endured exceeding torments, that being thus diſquieted in his thoughts, and deſirous of eaſe to his reſtleſſe paſſi-

paſſions, one day among ſt many that he paſſed ouer with penſiuenes, he got himſelfe into a ſolitary place, and there in ſad ſilence medita-ted on his misfortune.

Montelyon by chaunce troubled with remembrance of his vn-knowne eſtate, chuſe the very place for his priuate meditations. wherein Perſicles was already ſhrowded, and ſuddenly eſpying him, beganne to withdraw himſelfe, vntill Perſicles deſired him to ſtay, vttering theſe ſpeeches. Worthy knight, I perceiue ſome in-ward care hath make you withdraw your ſelfe from me, but impart your diſcontent to me: if not, yet heare mine, for I haue long deſired to impart them vnto one, on whoſe fidelity I might repoſe my ſelfe, and you are the man I haue elected, hauing hadde ſufficient triall of your courteſie and friendſhippe, that without doubting I durſt com-mit my ſelfe to your ſecreſie, for your ayde may, as heretofore it hath preſerued me,

My Lord, replyed Montelyon, I account my ſelfe onely fortu-nate, in your loue, and my heart acknowledgeth my euerlaſting bounden duety to none ſo much as to your Maieſty, which bindeth me in all duty to become your thrall, being more ready to venture my life and vttermoſt endeauours in your ſeruice then you can ima-gine: therefore good my Lord, feare not to impoſe any taske vpon me, for by your imploying me I ſhall account my ſelfe onely bleſt. I thanke you good friend (quoth he) and if euer fortune fauour me a-gaine, I will requite this kindneſſe, though now I am plunged in the depth of ill lucke, being as you ſee deppriued of my kingdome by the rebellion of my owne ſubiects, and the Tyranny of an ill neigh-bour the King of Armenia: the briefe diſcourſe whereof is this. My Father when he liued, matcht my ſiſter Piera in marriage with this worthy Knight Deloratus, ſending me vnto Piera with her, who before my returne dyed, whileſt I was there I chanced to fix mine eyes on the beauty of Conſtantia, daughter to the Perſian King, which by reaſon of my ſudden departure, I could not giue her know-ledge, hauing no other comfort but my ſiſter Piera, to whom I be-wrayed the ſecrets of my heart, departing with her promiſe of aſſi-ſtance whileſt I went into Aſſyria to eſtabliſh my Kingdome, Prince Palian of Arabia obtained the King of Perſias conſent to marry Conſtantia. Which newes Piera ſent me, I being much

troubled therewith, after I had refelled my olde enemy the King of Armenia in a battell, I left the gouernment of my kingdom to two of my noble men, & departed in the habite of a Palmer into Persia, where within short space I found such meanes by my sisters friendship, that I was in that habit without suspition, in Pieras chamber, and thereby had conference with Constantia, and attained her consent nothing remayning, but onely meanes how wee should escape, which afterwards we effected, and trauelled together vntill we came to a shepheards house, where we were kindely welcommed, contracting a solemne marriage betwixt our selues, because wee durst not be knowne the contrary, where wee liued some dayes in quiet: in the meane time the King of Persia caused diligent search to be made, and it was Pisors chance to finde vs, who kept our counsel, and was by me sent into Assyria, to fetch some of my owne knights to attend me home, where he found my Nobles at strife: and the King of Armenia taking opportunity, that with a mighty band of Souldiers, slew most of my part, the rest ioyning with him, vntill he had fully ceazed my Crowne.

Pisor with this heauy newes returned to me, being vnwilling to giue me knowledge thereof, which ouercame my heart with such griefe, that seeking a solitary place, I wondred so far that I could not returne to the Shepheards house the same night.

Constantia missing me, likewise stole from the cottage to seeke me but directing her steps a contrary way, or meeting with some misfortune that slew her, I neuer heard of her since. Pisor, he likewise went forth to seeke vs, and vnwillingly tasted of an vnfortunate fruite, that infused a sleepinesse vpon him for foure and twenty houres: but notwithstanding his and my most earnest search, wee could neuer finde her, nor I feare neuer shall. But if I could recure this euill done me by my foes, I would then spend the rest of my dayes in her search. Hauing ended his speech, his heart was so much ouercome with griefe, that he had much a doe to withholde his eyes from teares.

Montelyon was opprest with no lesse griefe then hee, whose heart felt more inward disquiet then a stranger could haue done, in silent sadnesse seeming to impart with his sorrowes: but not abide to counsell him which way to recure them. That at last by reason

ſon the neceſſity of the time affoyded little reſpite, they were conſtrained to depart.

CHAP. XV.

How *Montelyon* by a ſtrange and dangerous adventure, wonne the City, and tooke *Palian* priſoner.

MOntelyon that Euening elected out of his owne Followers twenty Knights, ſuch as he eſteemed moſt valiant, telling them he had a matter of great danger and ſecreſie to compaſſ, which might be a meanes to eſtabliſh Perſicles in his Kingdome, if they would faithfully ſoyne with him. Which they ſtedfaſtly vowed to accompliſh, and to follow him, although it were euen to their deaths. Arme you then, quoth he, in Armenian Armour, of which you haue choyce, and come to me at midnight.

This being performed, and the Knights come, Montelyon with them departed through the Camp vnto the City Gates, where Montelyon knockt, but ſcarce ſo lowd that the Porter could heare him, who yet notwithſtanding, comming to the Battlements, demanded who it was? I am ſaid Montelyon, Althetus, and other Armenians, as thou mayſt know by our Armes, and bring good newes: therefore open the Gates, leſt by thy delay we be betrayed, for we are purſued. The Porter being out of all doubt, and haſty to ſuccour them, vnbolted the Gates. Montelyon was no ſooner entred, but he ſlew the Porter, entring the Lodge, and apprehending the watch, who lay ſleeping, and ſlaying moſt of them before they awaked: One of them ſubmitting himſelfe, thus ſaid. I am an Aſſyrian, ſpare my life, and if you be friends to Perſicles, I will giue you ſuch directions, as you may ſurprize the City, and ſubdue Palian.

Montelyon ſayd, in ſo doing thou ſhalt be honoured of thy King and purchaſe thy owne liberty. After that they had put the reſt to the Sword, the Aſſyrian directed them to the Pallace, and by ſo ſecret a way that he brought them euen within the compaſſe of the Caſtle, to the very place where as the Guard was. Montelyon

then thus ſaid to his Followers. My companions: let not feare now poſſeſſe your hearts, but by this exployt win honour for ever. Then by the Aſſyrians direction, they divided themſelves into two parts, the one to the foremoſt entrance, and the other by a By-way. Montelyon likewiſe knockt, and one of the Guard miſdoubting no miſchiefe, opened the doore, whereinto Montelyon ruſht with his ſword drawne, not ſpeaking a word, slaying the firſt, the next, and all that came within his compaſſe: the Guardians were ſo amazed therewith, that they were confounded in their ſences, their courages for lack of time to conſider, abated, and their hands with feare trembling not able to drain their ſwords, and when they were drawne, not knowing whom to offend, for Montelyon and his Knights were ſo like them in Armour, and ſo intermingled amongſt them, that they knew not whether they ſtroke their owne fellowes or no, not knowing one from the other: by which meanes Montelyon and his knights who by a privy token knew each other, made ſuch a ſlaughter amongſt them, that all the flood ſwom with their blood. Some of them made meanes to flye by the backe doore, but even then, as they kept out, they met death, he that followed not knowing him that went before to be ſlaine, that had a thouſand come that way, they had one by one met with deſtruction, that in the end, by Montelyons valour there was not one left alive, nor any eſcaped. And this complot perfourmed with ſuch expedition in the dead time of the night, that the rumor thereof came not to the hearing of any. That within ſhort ſpace and little labour, Montelyon ſurprized Palian even in his Bed, who ſeeing one in Armour beſmeared with blood, with his ſword ready drawne, being exceedingly affrighted, asked what he was: I am ſaid Montelyon, thine enemy, and Perſicles friend, Thou art a villaine and a Traytor ſaid he, and with that he called to his Guard, crying out treaſon, treaſon, I am betrayed, helpe, helpe. Thou cryeſt in vaine, ſaid Montelyon, for there is none here to help thee: for by this hand thy Guard are ſlaine, and thou ſhalt follow them the ſame way to death, unleſſe thou aske mercy: for my hands can hardly abſtaine from working vengeance on thy trayterous head, thou haſt deſerved to be puniſhed with inexorable torments. Montelyon had ſcarce ended theſe words, but the rumoring Echo of an exceeding outcrie, ſollicited his eares, the occaſion was this. After Montelyon was departed

parted his Tent, his Squire following him; and seeing him enter the City with so few in his Company, ranne backe with all speed, and certified Pericles what he had seene, who fearing least that valorous attempt might endanger his life, and hearing that he had gotten entrance into the City, with all the haste he could armed himselfe, and calling vp Deloratus, Pisor, Cothanes and Olimus, and all the rest of his chiefe Commanders of the Army, with the choyce of fyue seuerall Bands, to the number of ten thousand, they some marched to the City gates, which they found wide open, and being entred, and by seuerall companies dispearst into every corner of the Streets, on a sudden on every side they gaue the Alarum, which rung through the City and eares of the Armenians with such terrour, that like men bereft of their Sences, they ran vp and downe to their destruction. There did Deloratus fill his hands with slaughter, and Pisor with cruelty reuenged his withholden liberty: There did Cothanes, Olimus, and many thousands, colour pale Death in purple Robes. There did Pericles tryumph ouer his foes, his conquering Sword working their deaths, that the City channels ran with goare blood, and their hasty steps were intercepted by the heaps of breathlesse foes: then began such an outcry, as would haue affrighted the sences of the most valiant: Old men hiding their heads in secret places of their Houses, the women with their children crying, wringing their hands, and making exceeding lamentation: the Soldiers ready to destroy one another, not knowing whom to offend, being ignorant in the originall of the Stratagem. The Counsellors and such as sate in Seate of Iudgement with speedy steppes conueying themselues to the Castle, where Palian was, where at their Entrance they saw such sad Spectacles of horror, and dreadfull war already entred, laying open passage to death. There Montelyons Followers though but few, some layd hands on them, slaying those those that resisted, and enclosing them that yelded, within a strong Tower.

Montelyon by this time had haled Palian from forth his Chamber and bound him hand and foot, brought him out of the Castle, inclosing him in a strong Jayle, where many malefactors were imprisoned, himselfe for safety becomming his Jaylor. And now hauing intelligence that Pericles was entred the City, he bent his steppes

to finde him out: by the way deſtroying the Armenians, who indeed tooke him to be one of their owne company by his Armour: at laſt he came to the Abbey, wherein the greateſt part of the Armenian ſouldiers lay, in a large field, encompaſſed within the wall, wherinto Perſicles with ſome three thouſand ſouldiers were before entred, making ſuch ſlaughter as would haue terrified the heart of any beholder.

Montelyon being alone, thought now or neuer to make tryall of his Valour: though being on foot, yet rushing amongſt the thickeſt of the Armenians, who ſeeing him in that Armor, rather thought he had beene of their Commanders, then an Enemy: who franticke with affright: ſlaughtered them, becauſe they were ſlow to ſlay their enemies: which when he perceiued, he cryed vnto them, Villaines, traytors, cowards, why ſhun you me? I am your Enemy, a Perſian, and come to deſtroy you. Notwithſtanding his ſpeeches, by reaſon they had no reſpite to conſider what to doe, they ſtill fled from him, not ſo much with thought of what he was, as with feare to come neare him: for none came within his compaſſe, but he ſlew, ſo that where he fought, their Death triumphed: and by reaſon of their flight, his haſty blowes onely hurt the Wind, for ſometimes, they were ſpent in vaine. Perſicles and Deloratus being nigh, ſtood and beheld him with admiration, wondring who it was, that in their iudgement with ſuch fury fought againſt himſelfe: vntill he eſpyed them, by his ſpeeches giuing them knowledge what he was, hauing found him they deſired to find, after ſhort ſalutations, they followed their enemies with cruell deſtruction: the bright day diſcloſing that nights bloody act, which appeared before them with ſuch a grimme aſpect, as that it made terror ſeeme moſt terrible, ſo that before many houres of the day were ſpent, the Armenians were vtterly deſtroyed, and amongſt them many Aſſyrians vnknowne to be Affricans were alſo ſlaughtered. Perſicles gaue ſtrict commandement to his ſouldiers, to make diligent ſearch the City throughout, and if they found an Armenian, to put him to the Sword, not ſuffering one to eſcape nor liue. Which done, he commanded the dead Carkaſſes in Carts to be carryed out of the City, which were ſo many that with much adoe they could performe it in a dayes labour. Which done, he gaue the ſpoyle of the Armenians Tents and Houſes vnto

the

the Perſian ſouldiers, and alſo gaue commaundement, that the women, children, olde men, and impotent people, ſhould be brought into the City and euery one poſſeſſe his owne houſe, wherein he dwelt before. This being perfourmed for that day, order being taken for the wounded, the ſouldiers enriched with ſpoile, the Citizens in quiet in their houſes, diligent watch ſet at each gate, and a ſtrong guard without in the Tents, for that it drew to night, and their labour required eaſe, after much toy, they betooke themſelues to their reſt.

Early the next morning they forſooke their Pauilions, firſt appointing certaine ſcowtes to watch about the borders of the country for the approach of the King of Armenia, which as they ſuſpected would be very ſhortly: for it was now two moneths ſince Artheſius departed.

By that time the day was aged the ſpace of three houres, the inhabitants of Aſſyria that had liued vnder the ſubiection and tyranny of the Armenians, hearing of Palyans ouerthrow, and being aſſured of Perſicles ſafety, which before that, their doubtfull hearts would not beleeue, came by great multitudes to ſubmit themſelues vnto their lawfull King: who reioycing thereat, commaunded them in ſigne of their obedience, to arme themſelues, and returne to their owne dwellings, and to deſtroy all the Armenians that inhabited the Land of Aſſyria, not ſuffering neither man, woman or child to liue. It was a wonder to beholde, with what greedineſſe the heady multitudes bent themſelues to their Enemies deſtruction, euery one thinking to be formoſt, and he that was laſt, yet thinking himſelfe happy that he could graſpe a Sword, to ſerue his owne liberty. Which they effected within three dayes, that there was not any of the Armenian Progenie left: for if they chanced to finde an Aſſyrian man married to an Armenian woman, both ſhe and all her Children had dyed. And if they found a Woman with child, or hauing any children and that ſhe could not ſhew an Aſſyrian was the Father of them, they had all of them dyed.

In the meane while, all thoſe that were Priſoners, were brought forth. Perſicles by the whole conſent of all his Nobles, People and Counſell, appointing them to dye, onely Palian excepted,

excepted, who likewise had that day abode a shamefull death, if he had not been a Kings sonne, being onely committed to safe custody, where he was honourably vsed.

These tragicall stratagems ouerpast, and all things in security, notwithstanding the beauty of the Land was destroyed by the Armenians, yet now the Nobles & Peeres of the land, that for a long time durst not looke ouer the Castle walls, assembled themselues vnto their King, making all preparation they could for his more honourable welcome: the Bels rung for ioy, and the people with exceeding reioycings applauded his victory. Within few dayes Persicles was with great royalty twise crowned King of Assyria, and Montelyon honoured with such exceeding commendation as his worthinesse deserued. Euery one (as of right they should) attributed that honoured victorie to his valour. All men growing into deepe affection towards him, and with reioycing manifest their loue.

CHAP. XVI.

Of the King of Armenia's arriuall with a new Armie. How *Montelyon* set *Palian* at liberty: and of a Peace that was concluded.

CErtaine of the Spyes had knowledge of the approach of the King of Armenia, and brought newes thereof vnto the Court, which stirred vp a new disquiet amongst them, for then they began on all sides to arme themselues a fresh: but that haste was soone stayed, by the arriuall of certaine Ambassadours from the King of Armenia, who deliuered their message in these words. Persicles of Assyria, the mighty King of Armenia commandeth thee to deliuer his sonne Palian in safety, whom he vnderstandeth thou hast taken prisoner. Withall his requireth restitution to be made of the Crowne and kingdome of Assyria, which by right of ancient inheritance is his: otherwise he will bring so puissant and inuincible an armie against thee, that shall waste and consume this Land, and leaning City, Towne nor house vndestroyed by fire: hee will

will make the Inhabitants perpetuall bondslaues, and he will cause them to flie, or abiding his comming, hee will take thee captiue, and leade thee into Armenia, where thou shalt remayne his vassaile. This is the summe of that he requireth, therefore let vs haue answere.

I will not study sayd Perficles, what to say, but thus say to him, His sonne is my prisoner, and I will detayne him: as for his threats I feare them not. vtterly denying his false title to my Crowne, which in my absence hee seazed vpon, not by valour, but trecherie. And tell him moreouer, that I demaund restitution for the wrong he hath done mee and my Country, which if he deny, nothing shall make me satisfaction but his sonnes death. And tell him thus, let him with haste returne, least my fury ouertake him, and so he feele the mischiefe he intendeth to me. for I meane to meete him presently, and worke such destruction among his Souldiers, as shall cause them to seeke his death for betraying them into my hands. Perficles spake these words with such fury, as made the Ambassadours assuredly beleeue his ment is, that with this answere they departed. The King of Armenia little thinking to receiue such an answere, but rather performance of his demaund: was so enraged, that hee commaunded his Souldiers to march towards the City, vowing to redeeme his sonne, or be taken prisoner himselfe. Perficles likewise had collected a mighty band of Persians and Assyrians to meete him, that it was likely this would proue the hottest battell that euer was fought in that part of the world.

In the meane time Palian was brought before Perficles, who sate vpon the Kingly throne in great Maiestie; thus saying to Palian: what canst thou alledge to excuse thy selfe from death, hauing rightly deserued the same? thou knowest that it now resteth in my power to set thee free, or put thee to death: which the iust Heauens haue inflicted vpon thee as a due punishment for thy tyrannie.

Palian made this reply, I am a King as absolute as thy selfe: therefore I know thou darest not put me to death: which if thou shouldest presume to attempt, know that the King of Armenia is hard at thy elbow to reuenge the same, whose power thou canst not escape. Therefore I defie thee, and dare thee to doe the same: for

I know thée to be of ſo cowardly a diſpoſition, that if thou once commeſt within my Fathers ſight, thou wilt runne away. The people ſtanding by, hearing him vtter ſuch approbrious words, cryed out, Let him dye, let him dye. It was long before the multitude could be appeaſed, but at laſt Perſicles thus ſayd, ſtanding vp in a great rage: Traytor, dareſt thou vtter ſuch words in my preſence: Thou ſhalt dye the death, not all the world ſhall redeeme thée. With that he commanded his guard to hew him in peices: with that they beganne to wound him, but Montelyon ſtepping betwixt them humbling himſelfe vpon his knée, thus ſayd.

Noble King, vouchſafe to heare me ſpeake, and without offence, let me clayme my right. This knight is my priſoner, therefore to put him to death without my conſent, were to doe me wrong: yet although I ſpeake this, pardon me, I challenge not any thing to contradict your will: but I humbly deſire your Maieſty to graunt mée this fauour, that as I tooke him ſo, I may diſpoſe of him.

Perſicles with haſte roſe from his ſeate, and imbraced Montelyon, ſaying. Were it my Kingdome, my life, or any thing that I eſteemed more then both, that you required, I would for euer curſe my heart, if it ſhould deny it you: for you haue done mée ſo much good, and my debt to you is ſo great, as if I liue a thouſand yéares, I ſhall neuer pay: therefore I giue him freely vnto you, and his life withall. I humbly thanke your Maieſty, replyed Montelyon, with that he tooke Palian by the hand, and after humble reuerence done, he departed to whom being alone, he vttered theſe ſpeeches. Noble Prince of Armenia, not expecting reward, nor fearing threates I here giue you liberty. Then did he deſire him to make choiſe of horſe and armour, wherewith hee armed himſelfe, and ſo rode diſcourteouſly away, his ſtout heart not ſuffering him to giue Montelyon thankes. And being come to the Campe, humbling himſelfe vnto his Father, and he imbracing him, thus ſayd: My deare Sonne, welcome, then ſtrutting vp and downe, ſaid, I thought that baſtard Perſicles durſt not detayne thee: for if he had, his life had paid thy ranſome, and ſhall doe yet for detayning thee; by heauen this night will I fire the Citty about his eares, becauſe I know that the coward dares not come forth to meet me.

Palians heart hearing his Fathers boaſting, and conſidering how-

how vnlikely it was he could performe it, with such a sudden passion of deepe consideration, changed with a sudden alteration, contrary to his former disposition, calling to remembrance how lately he was in danger of death, the force Persicles had about him, the late slaughter he had committed against his Souldiers, the curtesie of Monteleyon, but most of all his ingratitude to him, that had freely given him his life, thus sayd.

My most Noble Father, not the feare of your forces, nor Persicles towardise (for by his doome I had dyed) hath set me at liberty, but the courtesie of a noble Knight that tooke me prisoner: who when Persicles had appointed my death, and the executioners were seizing vpon me, challenged me to be his Prisoner, honourably armed me, and courteously let me goe. Therefore I beseech you withdraw your Forces, and offer no more wrong to Persicles, who never offended you, the Kingdome of Armenia is as good as the Kingdome of Assyria, and better: and it is better to enjoy that with quiet, then both that and this with discontent. If not for that, yet for this, I humbly intreat you to conclude a Peace with Persicles, for your owne safety, for his power is too mighty to be subdued by the small Forces you have brought. He is now allyed to the Persian, who is not yet your enemy, but onely your Friend: but if these Warres continue long, he will prove your mighty Foe. For if you goe forwards I must stay behind: for it were a great dishonour for me to fight against him that hath so honourably, courteously, and liberally giuen me my life: If you should be overcome, how much would it endanger your life, and if your life were in danger, doe you thinke you could escape? Wellaes, I will rather submit my selfe into the hands of your enemies, or shed my owne blood before your face, then liue to see so dismall a day as that will prove: therefore I humbly desire you to conclude a Peace.

The King heard out his speeches with silent deration, being so inwardly vexed, and with such desire thirsting for reuenge, that his heart was ready to burst with swelling malice: but at last more mollified with despaire of victory, then of yeelding to his Sonnes request, he sayd: Let it be as you will have it, for this time you shall ouer-rule me.

Then Palian thus ſayd, My Noble Father, I know to conclude this peace will turne to our everlaſting good, and your own content: Perſicles is honourable, and never offended you, And I know will honourably embrace this peace: therefore I deſire you, let it be concluded with your free conſent.

With that he gave his conſent, willing him to conclude what he thought good, and he would ratifie it. Palian then mounting himſelfe, preſently departed towards the City, but ere he came there, he met with Perſicles mighty band of ſouldiers, and deſiring to ſpeake with Montelyon, he kindly embraced him, yelding unto him ſo many hearty thankes with ſuch courteſie, love, affection, and earneſt vowes for preſerving his life, as Montelyon wondred at that ſudden alteration in him, that before was ſo rude and diſcourteous, moſt kindly welcomming him. Then did Palian unfold the cauſe of his comming, with ſuch earneſtnes, intreating Montelyon to joyn with him to conclude that peace, that he promiſed his aſſiſtance, and went with him to Perſicles.

Palian delivered his meſſage with humble reverence, and Perſicles with as much courteſie received it. And ſo effectually was this wrought, that the Peace accepted, and both the Armies meeting, in ſtead of blowes, embraced each other: Then did the King of Armenia and Perſicles ſalute each other: Firſt, in ſtrange ſort, but afterwards with more familiarity. After many ſpeeches of both ſides, Perſicles accuſing him of wrongs, and he alleadging the contrary, that notwithſtanding Palian labouring earneſtly to conclude the peace, yet the battell was like to joyn, and often by iterating hot ſpeeches they both grew to exceeding rage, which againe by Palians and Montelyons good perſwaſions was aſſwaged: Growing to this Concluſion, a Peace was ratified for two yeares, in which time Ambaſſadours ſhould be ſent to the King of Perſia, and Macedonia, to entreat their royall aſſiſtance to make an end of this Controverſie: Perſicles heart could hardly endure to yeild to his foe any further, or abſtaine himſelfe from preſent revenge, or appoint his rightfull Eſtate to be determined by the doubtfull courſe of arbitrement, in his heart ſcorning the Armenians ſhould have ſo much ſcope limited, as though he had any intereſt at all in his Kingdome, but rather, that he ſhould then eyther abſolutely winne all, or loſe all: but regarding

ding how much he had troubled Deloratus and the Persians, who now desired to returne home into their owne Countrey, but most of all, himselfe desirous to travell in search of his deare Constantia, from whom he had bæne long absent: For whose sake he would have lost his life, Kingdome and Liberty: whose absence was a continuall griefe to his Conscience, and a restlesse torment to his heart: for whom he had endured many thousand broken sleeps, utterly despairing of finding her, but that, nor length of time, nor other ambiguity could cause his heart believe, that he should finde her, and that she was living: therefore he constrained his royall heart to yeild to any thing.

And having taken the King of Armenia's Oath, not to interrupt him in his Kingdome, untill the time prefixed, they parted, Persicles to the City, and the King with his Army into Armenia. Palians heart was linckt in such loving admirations of Montelyons vertues, that he humbly intreated his Fathers leave to stay in Assiria to beare him company, but he denyed him, reproving him greatly, and with bitter tearmes checking him: but notwithstanding, within few dayes in disguise he departed. The King would have sent after to stay him, but that he was earnestly entreated to the contrary by his Nobles.

Palian being kindly welcommed of Montelyon, discloſed the cause of his departure from his Father, onely with no other intent, but to enjoy his company, and by shew of duty to doe Persicles service: which proceeded not of any coloured or imaginary dissimulation, but from the depth of a constant resolution. Such a sudden Metamorphosis had the view of Montelyons vertues, and his fathers tyranny wrought in him, that he admired the one, and abhorred the other. Of which he gave such manifest tokens, that Persicles had no cause to misdoubt him, nor Montelyon to refuse his familiarity.

CHAP. XVII.

How after the Peace concluded, *Perſicles* left the Government of *Aſſyria* vnto *Piſor*, determining himſelfe to trauell in ſearch of *Conſtantia*. How they arrived in *Perſia*. Of their honourable entertainement, and of other contrarious Accidents in Love that befell in their *Perſian* Court.

AFter all theſe troubles were ouerpaſt, the Perſian Souldiers richly ſent home into Perſia, and Perſicles had eſtabliſhed his Kingdome, leauing the ſame to the gouernment of Piſor, he determined to trauell in ſearch of Conſtantia, making the occaſion of his departure, to be to accompany Deloratus into Perſia, none but Piſor and Montelyon knowing the contrary.

By the way as they went, Cothanes deſired them to vouchſafe to viſite his Habitation, which the rather they did, to ſee the roabes that were found about Montelyon. They were honourably welcommed thither, and royally feaſted. Cothanes Lady bringing forth the packet, which they opened and well viewed, neyther Deloratus nor Perſicles knowing any of them, for they were ſuch as Conſtantia had in Arabia. Amongſt the reſt, there was a Iewell of exceeding beauty and richnes, which Montelyon in the preſence of them all put about his neche, vowing neuer to part with it vntill he had found out his Parents.

Afterwards they departed, Montelyon leauing Cothanes and his Foſter-mother, bewayling his departure with abundance of teares. Within few dayes they arrived in Perſia, the King ſending out Troupes of gallant Knights to attend them, the Eſtates Nobles, and Peeres of the Land in rich attire to entertaine them, and himſelfe with the Queene, Piera and Lanula his eldeſt Daughter with a number of other gallant Ladyes forſaking the Court to meet them. The Citizens likewiſe hearing of their approach, prepared to entertaine them with delightfull ſhowes, the Knights met them ſome two miles from the City, welcomming Deloratus with reuerence, and

the

the other three Knights with courteſie. Next the Nobles embraced them, and at the City gates they ſaw the King with royall aſſembly ſtaying their comming, vnto whom Deloratus kneeled, whileſt they with teares welcommed his ſafe returne, and whileſt he embraced Piera, and his ſiſter Lanula, the King and Queene welcommed Perſicles: And when he had left them to ſpeake to Piera, they demanded of Deloratus who thoſe ſtrange Knights were. The one of them quoth he, is our late reconciled friend Palian, and the other is the moſt valiant Knight Montelyon, that by his valour hath both preſerued our liues, confounded his enemies and wonne himſelfe immortall honour. The King of Perſia bad Palian welcome into Perſia, he likewiſe imbraced Montelyon, who with humble reuerence kneeled at his feet.

All that beheld him, admired that one of ſuch young yeares ſhould be endued with ſuch honoured Chiualry: eſpecially the Ladies with there nice eyes, ſurueyed each part of his perfect lineaments which they found to be moſt exquiſite, iudging none like him in comelineſſe but Perſicles. All tedious ſalutations being ouerpaſt, vntill they came to the Court, entring with ſuch royalty, as diuine an admiration to the beholders eyes, there might one haue beheld the people with greedy deſire by multitudes thronging to beholde them: but eſpecially the White Knight, euery one asking which was he, that he himſelfe might heare them, which oftentimes made the bloud reuiue in his cheekes, with ſuch bluſh, that it might eaſily haue beene deſcerned. To rehearſe euery particular would be ouer tedious, and to ſtay long in recitall of their royall entertainement, feaſts, ſpeeches and welcomes, would detaine you from the hearing of Conſtantias misfortune, for ſuch entertainment there was, and euery thing performed with ſuch royalty, as might haue beſeemed the greateſt Monarch of the world.

After ſupper, the time of reſt being come, the aged King and Queene bad good night to their gueſts, and euery one betooke themſelues to their ſeuerall lodgings, remitting conference to the next dayes opportunity.

Perſicles being alone ſpent moſt part of that nights reſt in ſtudying which way to iourney in ſearch of Conſtantia, Montelyon in conſideration of his vnknowne Parents. Palian ſurfeitting in

loue with Praxentia. She in commendation of Montelyon, Deloratus in pleaſure with Piera, and the olde King and Queene in ioyfull remembrance of all their ſafety, euery one poſſeſt with a ſeuerall conceit, vntill ſlumbring ſleepe ouercame their ſence: Early the next morning they forſooke their beds, Perſicles and Deloratus in conference with the King and Queene, and Piera in the hearing of Praxentia, and diuers other Ladies, rehearſing the warres in Aſſyria, and the manner of their victorie, Montelyon in company of Palian, commended the royalty of the Perſians court, and the beauty of the Ladyes. Which ſpeech they entered into by reaſon of Palian, whoſe heart could not chuſe but vtter his inward thoughts, which had entertained a forſeiting view to Praxentias beauty, which was ſo exquiſite, as it might haue intangled the ſences of any man, with their beautious obiect: Onely Montelyon reſted as free from, as one that neuer thought of loue, hauing his ſences ſo fully poſſeſt with deſire to finde his Parents, and ſearch for Conſtantia, that no other thought could enter his breſt. But ſuch a contrariety had blinde Fortune wrought amongſt them, that euery one deſired a contrary thing: for Palian doted not ſo much on Praxentias, as ſhe did on Montelyon, and ſhe was ſo farre thinking ſuch a thought, that it was in vaine for her to hope: Palian ſeeking opportunity to giue her knowledge thereof, and ſhe expecting when Montelyon ſhould proffer loue to her: and he on the other ſide, ſeeking meanes to haſten his departure, which ſhe would inſtantly haue done, but that ſhe could not ſo ſoone ſeeke to leaue the King of Perſia, nor his ſiſter: but notwithſtanding the King of Perſia requeſted him to ſtay a moneth, which ſhe could by no meanes deny, Palian was glad of this, and Praxentia was not ſorry, onely Montelyon thought the time would be tedious, becauſe his affections were wholly bent on his iourney.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

How *Praxentia* ſent her Nurſe to *Montelyon* with a meſſage, the Nurſe tooke *Palian* for *Montelyon*, and to him diſcouered her ſecrets.

PAlian deuiſed all meanes hée could to haue conference with Praxentia, refuſing reſt, food, and company, to ſtudy thereon: oftentimes enioying her company, but not the opportunity hée expected, ſurfeitting with beholding her beauty, and tying himſelfe faſter in the ſnares of loue, but finding no hope of comfort. But on a day it thus fell out. Praxentia deſiring eaſe, ſent a Damzell to an olde Lady, named Lanula, willing her to come and ſpeake with her, who inſtantly came, and being alone with Praxentia, hauing this conference. Lanula (quoth ſhe) I haue occaſion to vſe your aſſiſtance, in a matter of great ſecreſie, which I haue refuſed to impart to any but your ſelfe, for the good opinion I haue of you, wherein you onely may doe me pleaſure, and euerlaſtingly binde me to requite the ſame. The olde Lady was ſo forward of her ſelfe, that without further entreating ſhe ſwore by many oathes, ſhe would faithfully execute whatſoeuer ſhe deſired, were the matter neuer ſo great, yea though ſhe hazarded her owne life thereby. I haue no reaſon to miſtruſt you, quoth ſhe, yet I cannot but feare to tell it, and bluſh at the rehearſall thereof. Lady, quoth ſhée, will you pardon me, if I tell you what it is? is it not loue? Yes, quoth ſhe, it is ſo, I am in loue, but feare I am not beloued, and him I loue, ſo honourable a Knight, as the world yeeldeth not his like: but being a ſtranger and vnknowne, I know he dareth not tell me that hee loueth, becauſe my Father will neuer conſent thereto: notwithſtanding I could be contented with his eſtate, were it neuer ſo meane, might I enioy him. I haue often béene in his company, ſhewing my ſelfe deſirous thereof, which any but himſelfe might perceiue: but I ſpent that labour in vayne, and ſhall do ſtill, vnleſſe you worke ſome meanes in my behalfe. Let me know his name quoth Lanula, and before many houres be paſt, I will by ſome meanes or other haue confe-

rence with him. Yéis the ſtrange Knight Montelyon, ſay what thou wilt to him, without impeaching my modeſty, and I care not: for not being by, I ſhall not blush, neither care I to hazard any thing for if he once goe from hence, I ſhall neuer ſée him agayne. As ſhe had ſpoken that word ſhe ſaw him walking alone towards the farther end of the garden,, at the entrance into a groue. Wonder he is, quoth Praxentia, Lanula tolde her, ſhe would euen then ſpeake, and to that intent with haſte ſhe went downe the ſtaires. Montelyon being come to the farther end of the garden, eſpyed Palian lying vpon a banke either ſléeping, or in a déepe ſtudy, paſſing by him vnſeene, for that he deſired no company, entring the Groue. Lanula likewiſe ſéeking him, eſpyed Palian, not knowing either, ſaluted him in ſtead of Montelyon, ſaying, Sir Knight, to you I thinke I haue a matter of importance to diſcouer, if your name be Montelyon? Palian anſwered not, but with courteſie bad her ſay on. There is a Lady of great renowne in this Court that beareth you déepe affection, who committed her counſels to me, but with no intent I ſhould diſcloſe them: yet I pitying her griefe, whome I am bound in all duty to pleaſure, and withall wiſhing your preferment, am thus bold to intercept your meditation: hoping that this newes cannot bée but gratefully accepted. I heartily thanke you (qd. he) aſſuring you that I am euery way as deeply in loue as any, but with one ſo farre my better, that feare to offend, maketh me ſilent: therefore I pray let me know her name. It is Praxentia qd. ſhe. And to her ſayd he, I owe my life, loue, affections, and liberty. Sir (qd. ſhe) I am glad hereof, and if you will follow my directions, I will worke ſo effectually, that you ſhall enioy her loue, whoſoeuer ſayth the contrary. I will be wholly ruled by you (qd. he,) neither will I refuſe any attempt to attaine the ſame: therefore I pray you tell mee where I may finde you, and ſoone in the euening I will repayre to you. My name is Lanula, quoth ſhee, and you ſhall haue me in the Lodgings ouer the Poſterne in the Prime Garden. With that ſhe departed, leauing him in a deepe meditation, what to doe to enioy her loue, & how to doe it without diſhonour to himſelfe, and iniury to Montelyon, but that he thought impoſſible: entring into theſe meditations: how contrary is my hap to all good ſucceſſe, that maketh me hazard my honour, and to aduenture ſuch a taske as may bring me to perpetuall infa-

infamie? How often already hath my life beene hazarded by Montelyons hand? and yet I like a franticke man, forsake my friends to follow him. Could any thing haue fallen out more miserable, then for me to dote on her, that loueth another? and hee the onely man that hath alwayes preuented my good fortune? Shall I then cherish this loue, or rote it out of my heart, as a poyson that will infect my soule? for the King of Persia will neuer yeeld his consent. And that which is worse, she will neuer loue him she hateth. I will therefore leaue off, and salue the wound before it be past recouery: and rather abandon this Court, my Life, Friends, and Country, then sue for loue in another mans name. Reuolting a thousand of these contrarious thoughts, at last he espyed Montelyon comming backe from the Grone, whom he saluted in this sort. Sir Knight, as I lay slumbring on this Banke, my senses were greatly troubled with your remembrance, and me thought an ancient Lady taking me for you, tolde me that a Lady of great dignity did loue mee exceedingly, and that she of purpose came to know how I was affected. Further my dreame continued not, but as I awoke I espyed you, and haue bitered all to you. Now what Lady this should be, I know not; vnlesse it be Praxentia.

Montelyon made this answere: What this should meane I know not, neyther is it to be regarded. For dreames are but idle Fancies, procured by the conceit or imagination of the Dreamer: thinking that of another that he wished to himselfe, which is more likely: For the Princes were euer-loth to place her loue on so base a Stranger as my selfe, and if she did so, yet it were in vaine: for my Fancies being now at liberty, cannot become bonds-men to Affection, were it to the greatest Princesse in the world, I speake not this, as reiecting her courtesie, but as one that esteemeth himselfe altogether vnworthy thereof. It may be, sayd Palian, though you account your selfe fortunate, yet you dare not trust me: and therefore you conceale it. Not so (quoth he) for I haue vttered all I think, or euer entend. Palian was glad to heare him say so, yet made no show thereof: passing the way betwixt that and the Pallace, in such like communication,

CHAP. XIX.

How *Palian* in a diſguiſe had conference with *Praxentia*, who tooke him for *Montelyon*.

HAuing left Montelyon, he gate himſelfe to his Chamber, exceedingly troubled in his thoughts, betwixt a ſtriuing to ouermaſter his loue, and yet to loue, and attaine his loue without hazarding his honour: but his affection had the ſuperiority, and thoſe ſparks of vertue which were but newly kindled in his thoughts vaniſhed, and he reſolued to try the vttermoſt iſſue of that ſtratageme, though it were in Montelyons name. Euening now drawing nigh, he remembred his promiſe, which was to repayre to Lanula, therefore thither he went, but ſo ſecretly as might be, where he likewiſe found her ſtaying for him, of whom he demanded what good newes? Lanula ſhutting faſt the doore, thus ſayd to him. After I returned from you in the Orchard, I went to Praxentia, and told her what ſpeeches I had with you, which reuiued her heart with ioy, willing me to let you vnderſtand, that it is not lewd deſire, immodeſt loue, nor indiſcreet intemperancy that hath procured her to this liking, but the report of your valour, regard of your vertues, and the worke that Nature neuer wrought in her before: therefore ſhe requireth you be conſtant, ſecret, and loyall: nor to regard her loue the leſſe, for that it was eaſily wonne, but to impute the ſame to Deſtiny, that had ordained him vnknowne to that honour, to be beloued of her, that hath refuſed to match her ſelfe to the greateſt Emperours in the world. By Heauen (ſo. Palian) my heart is tyed to her in ſuch bonds of conſtant loue, that ſhould ſhe command mée to riue my heart from faithfull breſt, I would doe it to fulfill her deſire, and therein my duty.

Few words (ſo. Lanula) was ſufficient, therefore know, that by reaſon of her Fathers diſpleaſure, ſhe dareth not openly converſe with you, but ſhe hath yéelded to be directed by mée, and therefore late this Night come to my Chamber, and I will get you the habite of a Carmer, in which diſguiſe you may with ſafety thorough the

Gar-

Garden enter her Chamber. Palyan yeelding her many thankes, departed, whilest she went and certified Praxentia what shee had determined. Whose loue being growne to a setled resolution, and desirous to ease her selfe of disquiet, gladly consented thereto, thinking the time ouer-tedious, company troublesome, and her supper vnsauorie, to taste the sweetnesse of her stolne affection. Palian at the time appointed went to Lanula, who had already prouided his disguise wherewith he apparelled himselfe, following her directions to finde the entrance to her chamber.

Palian being entered the Garden, seeme found the doore fast shut but Praxentia hauing a sight of him out of her window came downe her selfe to open the same. His heart was so rauisht with ioy of her presence, that he could not instantly speake: but humbling himselfe vpon his knee, he sayd. Vertuous Lady, I humbly desire you to pardon this my boldnesse, which I would neuer haue vndertaken, had not some former hope animated me thereto: but since it is your gracious pleasure so much to honour my vnworthinesse, I humbly giue my poore heart to your disposition, which shall account it selfe euerlastingly happy to be imployed in your seruice.

Good Knight (qd. Praxentia) had I not beene fully assured of your vertues, I would neuer haue admitted you this fauour: therefore I accept your gift, and in exchange thereof will giue you mine: so that you promise me to vse it honourably.

Else let me become the infamous reproach of all the world. let my ioyes be turned into sorrowes, my health into sicknesse, my pleasure into paine, and all that I wish to proue my good, to be my euerlasting misery.

Your Protestations deare Knight, quoth she, are of sufficiencie to ouercome my yeelding heart, that harboureth no misdoubt of your disloyall meaning, but it is fully assured your vertues cannot harbour dissimulation, that is altogether different from vertue: therefore trusting you more then my selfe, I admit you that fauour, I neuer before granted, which is to receiue you as my chosen friend, trusting you will proue as faithfull as I desire, and will not reward my fauour with disloyalty.

Which sayd, taking him by the hand, shee led him vp into her chamber, where many speeches past betwixt them, he with earnest-

neſſe entreating her conſent to loue him, and ſhe binding him by many vowes to be conſtant.

He durſt not vtter many ſpeeches, leaſt it might betray him: withall his conſcience guilty of deceit, withheld him from boldneſſe, and though peraduenture ſhee would haue taken any thing in good part, yet feare to be diſcouered himſelfe, made him thinke no ſuch matter, but his behauiour ſo neere as hee could, framed himſelfe to the eſtate of Montelyon. Which likewiſe pleaſed Praxentia well, who though ſhe were very affectionate her ſelfe, yet ſhe imputed his coloured modeſty to vertue, and his diſſimulation to pure honeſty, that by this conference he was fully aſſured of her loue, and ſhe nothing doubting of his loyalty, being conſtrained by reaſon of the dayes approach, to breake off their communication, referring their next meeting to Lanulas direction: for that time both parting with many courteous farewels, ſhe fully contented, he ſomewhat diſcontented that he had attained that fauour in another mans name which if he might haue claimed as proper to himſelfe, he would haue deemed himſelfe moſt happy. Clogged with theſe cogitations hee gate to Lanulaes Chamber to whome he diſcouered his fortunate ſucceſſe, telling her that in the Euening he would repayre to her, to know *Praxentias* pleaſure, and her direction, when, and where to ſpeake with her againe.

CHAP. XX.

How *Montelyon* was in loue with *Praxentia*. How he was ſtill preuented by *Palian*, of ſpeaking to her. And how hee in diguiſe lay with her.

EArely the next morning Praxentia forſooke her reſt, and although ſhee had ſlept but a little that night, yet ſhe was loath to be accuſed of ſlouth, and apparrelling her ſelfe, framing a more then ordinary kinde of pleaſant countenance, for that her minde was more then wontedly contented, ſhee attended the Queene in company of the Lady *Piera*.

It

It ſo fell out that day, that the King of Perſia himſelfe, with the Peeres of the land, feaſted with Perſicles, Palian, and Montelyon, which fell out according to Praxentias wiſh, that ſhe might beholde her beloued Knight with a ſurfetting view. Palian likewiſe was no leſſe glad then ſhe, that he might beholde her on whom his heart was fixed: and euery one ſauing Perſicles and Montelyon, had their hearts inclining to diſport, onely they two reſted ſad, heauie, and vnpleaſant, which was eaſily to be eſpyed, and was chiefly noted of Praxentia with one conceit, and Palian with another. All the dinner time Praxentias eyes were fixed on Montelyon, Palians on her, and his bending downeward with a heauy aſpect. Which drawe Praxentia into many cogitations: ſometimes thinking he diſdayned to looke on her openly, who had ſhowne her ſelfe ſo affable in priuate: then ſhe thought it was care to diſcouer her loue, which is eaſilieſt diſcerned by the eyes: but when againe ſhe ſaw he made no ſhew at all of regard to her, her colour often changed, ſometimes with griefe, ſometimes with anger, ſometimes with feare, fixing her eyes ſtedfaſtly on him, and then glauncing about to ſee if any noted her, Palian noted her, and well vnderſtood her meaning, as earneſtly noting her behauiour, as ſhe did Montelyons: often changing his countenance, ſometimes with feare to be ſeene, then with a iealous conceit: then againe, with an amorous thought, and againe with accuſing of himſelfe, for diſloyall dealing towards her and him. Pieras minde was moſt at leiſure to note all, which ſhe perfourmed with diligence, but fixing their eyes placed vpon contrary obiects, ſhe thought there was as contrary a Simpathie in their affections, both perceiuing Palians double conceit, Praxentias diſquiet, and Montelyons careleſſe regard of eyther. By a priuy token vnſeene of any, giuing Perſicles an inſtance thereof, who quickly conceited her meaning: and iumpt with her in opinion, all the dinner time noting them. Which being paſt, and muſicke filling the roome with pleaſant harmony, Perſicles pulling Montelyon by the ſleeue, whiſpered theſe words ſoftly in his eare.

Friend, rowſe your ſelfe from this ſad dumpe, doe you beholde how you are noted? vpon my life the Princeſſe Praxentia is in Loue with you: and if it be ſo, may you not account your ſelfe moſt happy.

By

My Lord, ſayd ſhe, you are diſpoſed to ieſt, no ſuch good fortune will fall to my lotte: and yet if it do, I know I ſhould neuer enioy it. Why, quoth Perſicles, had you but ſeene ſo much as I, and noted her lookes, you would thinke ſo much as I: follow my counſell, doe but try, and you ſhall finde it ſo. What if ſhe were the Empreſſe of the Vniuerſall World, would you not venture? and were ſhe not the better to be beloued? and you the leſſe cauſe to diſpaire, if ſhe ſhould refuſe your loue, all the doubt you haue, is her Fathers diſlike: neither feare that, Time may bring things vnthought of, to good effect. Doe but follow my counſell for this time, and after I will tell you more.

By this time the muſicke was ended, and euen with that Montelyon caſt his eye on Praxentia, who ſteadfaſtly looked on him, her heart being ſo much grieued with contrariety of thoughts, that the water was ready to ouerflow her eye-lids. When Montelion, ſaw that, he preſently began to conceiue hope, and by little and little, loue ſtole the poſſeſſion of his heart. Withall hee remembred what Palian had before ſayd to him: all which ſeemed likelihoods that it was ſo. Whileſt he continued in theſe thoughts, and with more boldneſſe had viewed her well (whoſe eyes was neuer off him) the Muſicke began to ſound againe, and the olde King of Perſia, being pleaſant and merry with feaſting, tooke the Queene by the hand to daunce. Perſicles ſeeing that, tooke Piera. Then ſayd the King is there none will make a third? With that Piera deſirous to ſhew Montelyon any fauour, deſired him to doe it: but he with mildneſſe and low courteſie made a refuſall, in regard of his duty to the King of Perſia. But ſuddenly Palian ſtept vppe, and tooke Praxentia to dance with him, who being of a milde behauiour, refuſed not, and the rather that none ſhould note her affection to Montelyon, which ſhe aſſured her ſelfe, he could not call in queſtion. Montelion was exceedingly vexed to be ſo preuented, yet ſmothering the ſame with a pleaſant countenance, the meaſures being ended, the K. of Perſia with the Q. departed leauing them to their recreation: Then Palian began to be diſquyet with feare, leaſt Montelion by conference with Praxentia would make knowne his laſt deceyt, and he by that meanes be preuented of all future hope, that he vſed ſuch meanes, that Montelyon could haue no conference with her,

which

which he by reason of his feare durst not with boldnesse seeke, nor she greatly expect, thinking to haue a time of more conuenience to meete.

All this time Montelyon did but intangle himselfe faster in the snares of affection, still louing to like, and liking to loue, and the more her loked, the more he loued, being for that time onely contented to looke, for other hope he attayned not, by reason of Palians preuention, and his owne feare to be accounted ouerbolde, which she thought she might well impute to his meane estate. The time of departure being come, and euery one ready to bid adieu, Praxentia gaue him a signe of her loue, with a gentle and kinde looke, and he her of his duty with a low courtesie.

Euery one parted, Praxentia troubled with doubt of she could not well tell what: for waying his behauiour, she could not compare it to bee like the behauiour of an affected Louer: neither could she account it disdaine nor want of gouernment, for she knew him wise, nor want of audacity, for he was holde enough in other matters, nor to inconstancy, for she could not perceiue his looked bent vpon any other. Troubled with a multitude of these passions, by reason of her little suspect of the truth, she made the best construction of all things, wishing Palian had bin further off that day, whom she thought of purpose intercepted their conference. But to ease her of these troubled thoughts, Lanula comes in with a message from Palian, who as soone as the company was parted, went to her, and noting with what little respect Montelyon had that day regarded her, he thought some misconceit might crosse his purposed intent: and fearing withall, least she should send to him, he sent this message: that with all humility, he desired her not to misconceiue his meaning for the little respect he gaue to her, was with no other intent, but to auoyde suspition, his heart being entirely bound in all dutie to her commaund. This message pleased her well, and banished all mists of care from her heart, deuising with Lanula, for a conuenient time to haue conference with him.

Montelyon likewise had taken such a view of her beautie, that he now yelded to be Loues thrall, and according to his distempered minde, could be pleased with nothing but solitarynesse, in silence to meditate vpon his fortune, on his loue, and on his likelyhood to at-

taine thereto, on Palians preuention, on his vnknowne eſtate, and on his vowed iourney in ſearch of Conſtantia, troubled with ſuch contrarieties, that he could not reſolue himſelfe of any comfort: tyring his ſences with meditation, wearing his heart with griefe, and weakening his body with abſtinence, voyd of hope, meanes, or comfort and yet neyther able to diſpaire, nor ſcarce daring to goe forward, then he thought to write, but he wanted a ſecret meſſenger: then he thought himſelfe to ſpeake with her, but he feared a denyall would be his reward, and that would be worſe then death:

Thus troubled in minde, he betooke himſelfe to his reſt, ſcarce able to ſhut his eyes one minutes reſt vntill morning: and then againe as voyde of comfort, as if he dreamed of a thouſand impoſſibilities, neyther able by the counſell of Perficles, nor otherwiſe, to deuiſe a meane to ſpeake to her: for his loue was now ſo violent, that it could not be permanent, Fortune intending quickly to ouerturne the ſame: for Palyon by indirect politcy dealt ſo cunningly, that by often recourſe vnto her, hee at the laſt wonne her to ſuch an abſolute conſent, that ſhe reſted wholly at his diſpoſition, neuer comming to her but in ſecret, and ſo late, that all lights were out: beſides Lanula being alde, firſt taking him for Montelion, neuer made queſtion but that it was he: by which meanes, he paſſed ſtill vndiſcryed, and betrayed the ſecrets of her heart to his priuity, that whatſoeuer hee deſired, ſhe would performe, and whatſoeuer hee counſelled her vnto, was but to preuent all meanes of diſcouering his diſloyalty: perſwading her to keepe her chamber for many dayes, which ſhee likewiſe performed. That contrary to her expectation, with diſtemperature of watching, and keeping her ſelfe in the cloſe Chamber, ſhee beganne indeed to waxe ſickly, which Lanula made knowne to him, appointing him the next day to come to her, and hee ſhould know when againe to viſite her: in the meane time, ſhe had wrought ſo with the King and Queene, that they had appointed her to bee her Keeper, and none might come at her, but by her ſufferance, which pleaſed Praxentia well. Night being come, Palion gat him to Lanulas chamber, where he found her of purpoſe to meete him, declaring all that had hapned, appointing him that night to come thither. Lanula returning to Praxentia, would not make knowne his comming to her that night, with no other intent but that Praxentia ſhould not breake her ſleepe.

At

At the time appointed, Palian was in the Garden, and Lanula ready to receiue him, conducting him by the Rayes of Praxentias Chamber, who was th her bed and fast a sleepe. Palian seating himselfe close by her, although the Lights were extinct, yet by the light of the Moone, which with her clearest light shone vpon the Bed, he might take a perfect view of her: who by reason of the heat, lay with all the Curtaines folded, and the couering that lay vpon her so thin that the full proportion of her delicate body might easily be discerned, the same being turned downe beneath her waste, with her necke naked, and her Ivory brests passing description, laying forth their beauties, her armes spred the one aboue her head, the other downe by her side.

Palian beheld this pleasant sight, which was able to ranish the sences of a most modest beholder, wherewith his heart was so enflamed, that he had much a doe to abstaine from touching that beauty. After, he had not stood long, but Praxentia being distempered with some slumbring motion, awaked and espying one so neare her bedside, was ready to giue a shrike, but with more regard marking his habite, she knew him, throwding her selfe from his sight, vntill he entreated her to pardon his boldnesse, protesting his intent was not to disquiet her. Neyther am I disquieted quoth she, now I know you, but I marueil I was not acquainted with your comming, it is Lanulas doing hath thus immodestly vsed me. I humbly beseech you (qd. he) take no offence thereat, but pardon vs both, the greatest fault being mine, for which I am contented to bide any punishment. Your punishment (quoth shee) can not be great, your offence being done to me, that loue you more then my selfe, hauing giuen my selfe to you, that if I haue discouered modesty will not permit, yet the offence being procured by you, you may pardon it. The sight qd. he, can procure no offence, for that it hurteth not, therefore in seeing I committed not iniury: but where there is mutuall loue, and consent in loue, there nothing can breed offence but disloyalty, which is as farre from me, as impossibilities: therefore I trust I can offend no way but in that, and in that I will neuer offend. Why this quoth she, may be dissembled in you but not in me. For I account it a great offence to be immodest, and nothing more contrary to perfect vertue.

You cannot offend in that quoth he, to me, for having given your ſelfe mine, why ſhould I not both ſee, touch and enjoy you? the firſt being granted, the laſt cannot be denyed. It is not the outward action that witeth the heart, but the inward conſent.

I deny not (quoth ſhe) all that I haue is yours, by mine owne gift and free conſent, yet you muſt forbeare poſſeſſion vntill the bargaine be confirmed by witneſſes: otherwiſe your Title is not good.

Yes (quoth he) my title is better by your gift, then by a thouſand witneſſe: for if you deny, they cannot anaile me: therefore ſince you cannot deny me intereſt, yeild me poſſeſſion. Theſe words were intermingled with many kiſſes and embracings, able to ſtir affection in ſenceleſſe creatures; ſo that Praxentia vnderſtood his meaning more by his behauiour then by his words, that ſhe ſaid.

Deare Knight, I vnderſtand your meaning, which I will not, nor cannot grant, but in any thing elſe you ſhall command me, onely I deſire and am reſolued to preſerue my Virginity without blemiſh: therefore good Knight requeſt not that, hauing ſo much as you cannot deſire more, my ſelfe, my company, my loue, my life, and all are at your diſpoſition, onely I challenge you (as you are a Knight) not to blemiſh my vertue.

Notwithſtanding he ſo much preuailed with her at the laſt, that ſhe gaue her conſent he ſhould the next night be ioyned to her in marriage, by ſuch meanes as ſhe would compaſſe, and then hee ſhould without denyall attaine his deſire.

This contented him not, but he grew to ſuch importunate requeſts, intermingled with ſuch Oathes and Proteſtations, being ſuch, as no reaſonable creature, but one of a ſhameleſſe diſpoſition would haue vttered or requeſted: withall framing in himſelfe ſuch a kind of deſperate behauiour, that ſhe could not tell well how to deny him: that at laſt ſhe called Lanula vnto her, whiſpering a few words in her eare: whereupon ſhe preſently drew the Curtaynes, and went out of the Chamber. Palian ſeeing that, put off his apparell, and layd himſelfe downe by her, folding her delicate body in his armes, with ſweet embracings, expreſſing both their loues, but Praxentia kept her word, for notwithſtanding he did what elſe hee deſired, yet ſhe reſerued her Virginity vndiſſolued. Aſſuring him by

ſo

ſo many entreaties to leaue that vnattempted, and often interminglingher words with ſuch effuſion of teares, that the hardeſt hearted, and moſt remorſeleſſe creature in the world would haue yeelded vnto: promiſing him if ſhe did not compaſſe her marriage the next night, yet he ſhould aſſuredly attaine his deſire, though ſhe hazarded her ſelfe to accompliſh it.

In theſe and ſuch like ſpeeches, the night was vnawares to them ouerpaſt, and the neceſſity of the time enforced his departure, ſo that taking his leaue of her with many ceremonious farewels, he apparelled himſelfe, and left her to meditate on that which had paſt betwixt them.

CHAP. XXI.

How *Montelyon* diſcouered *Palians* deceit, and how hee was in ſome ſort reuenged. Haſting *Perſicles* to depart in ſearch of *Conſtantia*.

IT fortuned that Montelyon that Morning was early vp, and more earely then any elſe, poſſeſſed with a troubled head, and a Loue-ſicke heart, and walking vp and downe the Gardens, at laſt in a heauy dumpe he ſate downe in an Arbour right ouer againſt Praxentiaes Lodging, euen at ſuch time, as Palian departed, who ſeeing one in ſecret come from thence, he priuily followed him, till Palian came to his Lodging. Montelyon then began verily to thinke that it was ſome Meſſenger, either ſent from her to Palian or returned with anſwers of ſome Meſſage he had deliuered, or that it might be Palian himſelfe, whom he reſembled in proportion, though not in habit.

The day-light waxing aged, he found out Perſicles, with whom he kept company all the day, thinking indeed it was Palian himſelfe that he had ſeene, for that he kept his Chamber moſt part of the day: when it grew towards night, he againe diſguiſed himſelfe, and girding his Sword to his ſide, he entred the Garden, and as he walked by the doore, with purpoſe to take vp his ſtanding in the Arbour

Lanula was come downe by that way, to bring a Fryer in, which ſhould ſecretly knit up the marriage, according to the agreement betwixt her and Praxentia, and eſpying one goe by, ſhee thinking it had beene he that appointed to come, called, ſaying; who is there, Montelion? He hearing that, ſayd, it is I. You come too ſoone, quoth ſhe, the Fryer that ſhould marry you to Praxentia, is not yet come, whom I am now going to ſeeke. Montelyon was halfe amazed: but thinking to finde out the truth, ſaid, What ſhall I then doe? Returne to your Chamber, quoth ſhe, and change your Apparell, for if you come in this, ſhe will be offended, for ſhe is very fearefull, and many troubled thoughts haue poſſeſt her head this day: ſhe did fall out with me wonderfully, for bringing you in the laſt night, when ſhee was in bed, but when ſhe had me draw the Curtaynes, and be gone, I thought you would haue pleaſed her ere ye parted: but in faith tell me, was ſhe not kinde? Had you not that you would haue? Montelyon bluſht to heare her immodeſt queſtions, making no anſwere, ſoothing her vntill her clattering tongue had bewrayed all the miſchiefe her ſelfe was guilty of. Well, quoth ſhee, ſtay here-by till I am returned, and then you ſhall goe in with me, for I dare not let you in before.

Montelion wondring at this accident, by the circumſtance of that he had heard, aſſuring himſelfe, that ſome man in his name had attained Praxentias loue, which fretted his heart with ſuch veration, that he was ready to runne mad with griefe: but calling himſelfe to better remembrance, he ſayd: you may ſaue that labour, I haue dealt with a faithfull friend to that effect, who promiſed to meete me here within this houre, therefore returne to Praxentia, my ſelfe will ſtay his comming.

Lanula thought nothing, but went in, telling Praxentia why ſhee returned ſo ſoone. Montelyon couering his face, as priuily as he could from being diſcryed, walking vp and downe by the doore, and within ſhort ſpace eſpyed Palion comming, aſking, who was there. Are you Montelyon? I am he, anſwered Palian: I am the Fryer (qd. he) that am appointed to marry you to Praxentia. With that Palyon embraced him, deſiring him to make no queſtion, but with all ſpeed to diſpatch the thing he had vndertaken. I will doe it, quoth he, out of hand: being both together come to the doore,

and

and by Lanula brought vp into the Chamber, Praxentia embraced Palion saying: Welcome my deare Knight Montelyon, this ioyfull houre shall make vs both happy, which I haue with great desire wished for.

I cannot, quoth he, yeeld you more then hearty thankes, vowing by heauen and earth neuer to deale disloyally with you, in thought, word, nor deede: therefore according to your pleasure, let it be done: Montelyon so well as he could, counterfeited the Fryer, desiring to haue a light. My friend quoth Palian, it may discouer vs. Shall I then, quoth he, marry I know not whom. Lanula said, neuer feare to be discouered, for on my life, there is none suspecteth it: with that she lighted a candle, setting it a farre off on the table. With that he said to Praxentia, this is not Montelion, but some villayne, that hath betrayed you: and discouering his face, both knew him. Praxentias heart with sudden griefe, feare and amazement, was ready to burst, he with a pale and dismayed countenance, stood as one transformed; and Lanula with feare and abundance of teares, stood wringing her hands. Praxentia could not speake a word with griefe to be so deceiued by him she most hated: and he with very shame, stood as one senceleſſe: whileſt Montelyon sayd, What disloyall and dishonourable dealing is this in a Prince, whose minde should harbour nothing but vertue, can dissimulation take such deepe roote in a royall breſt, then well may base-borne Peasants be excused for barbarous and faithleſſe dealing: vnworthy to bee so worthy of that name: Was there none to exercise your detested practise vpon, but the daughter of a Royall King, and in the name of a strange Knight, that by his deeds seeketh honour: what impiety can bee compared to this, or who can hope for vertue in that breaſt that harboureth such deceit: Indeede such an Acte destroyeth obscurity: therefore you did well to deny vs light: for were it day, the Sunne would blush, or withdraw her bright splendor amongſt the myſty cloudes to behold it. Well may he liue, but for euer will he be hated, that seeketh to fulfill his content by such dishonoured impiety.

Base fellow quoth Palyon, presumeſt thou vpon my lenitie to abuse me: I count it not dishonour to winne the loue of so beautifull a Lady, by any hazzard: yet it griefeth mee, that I was compelled

compelled to name my ſelfe after him that I account my inferiour, I quoth Praxentia, you are inferiour in birth, but not in vertue.

By heauen quoth Montelyon, thou haſt ſo much diſhonoured this Lady, and iniured him, that thou art not worthy to liue, and were it not for offending her ſacred eyes with ſlaughter, ſhe ſhould beholde thy maſſacre. With that he drew his ſworde.

Nay good friend, quoth ſhe, ſtay thy hand, indeed it will offend me: Therefore let him goe, and liue to his diſhonour and my ſhame: for I will not be guilty of his death. And I beſeech thee as thou fauoureſt vertue, not to diſcloſe this to any, leaſt hearing it ſpoken by others, it procure my death, as for him, I thinke ſhame of himſelfe will withhold him from blazing his owne and my reproach: for Lenula ſhe hath done me wrong againſt her will.

For my part deare Lady, quoth he, it ſhall neuer paſſe my lips, whileſt life doth laſt, for I ſo much abhorre the fact, that I hate to ſpeake of it.

Palian ſeeing his pollicy diſcloſed (though it was now no time of recantations: for he well perceiued Praxentia abſolutely hated him) was ſo ouercome, that hee ſtood as a liuing creature transformed to a ſenceleſſe picture; whileſt Praxentia pulde from of her necke a rich Iewell which ſhe gaue Montelyon, in conſideration of his paines, withdrawing herſelfe from their company.

Palian what with ſhame and griefe went thence in a rage, ready to runne madde, ſpending his time in ſuch anguiſh, ſtudyes, plots and deuices, which was to winne her Loue, that before many dayes hee became ſo ſicke, that all men expected nothing but his death.

Montelyon, caſting off the affection he had entertained, with conceit that Palian had diſhonoured her, as hee might well ſuppoſe by Lanulas ſpeeches, haſted Perſicles in ſearch of Conſtantia, not once diſcouering why he had ſo ſuddenly altered his minde, reſoluing neuer to ſet his fancy on any Ladyes beauty, which did but diſquiet the minde, and make it vnapt to practiſe vertue: purpoſing neuer to leaue ſearching, though it were through all the world to finde his parents, and aid him in ſearch of Conſtantia.

The day preſſed being now come, they armed themſelues, none knowing the intent of their departure but Piers. Taking

they

their leaues of the King and Queene with great ſolemnity, the hearty loue of thouſands of Perſians, wiſhing them good ſucceſſe, many ſeeming dead with griefe for their departure, who with their Mirth, Turneyes & Tryumphs, had delighted the eyes of the beholders. Perſicles was armed in blacke armour, with all his furniture correſpondent: and Montelyon in an armour of Siluer, without any deuiſe at all therein, with his Steed and furniture as white as Snow, that by their difference, they might eaſily be knowne from all men.

CHAP. XXII.

Of certaine ſtrange adventures that befell *Perſicles* and *Montelyon*, by which they were parted. And the conference that *Perſicles* had with *Delatus*, which contayneth the Hiſtory of *Delatus* misfortunes. And how *Perſicles* by *Delatus* counſell returned into *Aſſyria*.

BEing without the City, and parted from all company, they trauelled directly towards Arabia, ſpending many dayes iourney without aduenture, and ouerpaſſing the tediouſneſſe of theyr trauaile in conference of ſundry matters, but eſpecially Perſicles deſciphered the fauour, proportion, beauty, and countenance of Conſtantia: that Montelyon might (if he came in their company vnknowne) the better know her. With tedious trauell they arriued in a pleaſant Valley, through the middeſt whereof, ran a moſt pleaſant Riuer, whoſe chryſtall ſtreames ran with great ſwiftneſſe, waſhing the Peble ſtones in her bottome ſo cleare, that they might eaſily be diſcerned, riding along by the Riuers ſide, they beheld a farre off two Damzels all in white on horſebacke, croſſing the Meddow with ſuch ſwiftneſſe, that they were both ſoone out of ſight, Montelyon deſiring to know what they were, deſired Perſicles to ſtay his return. With that he ſpurd his Steed, who ranne ſo ſwiftly, that the earth ſeemed to ſhake vnder him: he rode a mile before he could ouertake them, but ſo ſoone as they eſpyed him, they turned backe, and before he could aske the queſtion, one of them ſayd: as you are a Knight and fauour the diſtreſſe of wronged Ladyes, pitty vs, and vouchſafe your ayde to reſcewe our Miſtreſſe, that euen now was taken away from vs by three mighty Giants.

Faire Virgins, quoth he, I profeſſe Armes, and to my vttermoſt will I ayde you, elſe were I not worthy the name of a Knight: therefore let me know her name. She is daughter to Amphiador Duke of Ila, her name is Philotheta, for beauty, vertue, modeſty, ſhape, courteſie, humility, temperance, chaſtity and wiſedome, not to be equalled, therefore the more to be pitied, and ſuccoured in diſtreſſe: we are poſting backe to bring this heauy Newes to the Court, and whileſt we ſtay here, ſhe runneth in farther danger. Which way went they quoth he, Directly by the way we came ſayd they, whom we would haue followed further, but that we durſt not venture ouer the Riuer after them. With that Montelyon turned backe, declaring to Perſicles what he had heard. If report lye not ſayd Perſicles, the Damzels haue not flatteringly praiſed her, I haue before this heard of her. Then both of them haſted to follow her, paſſing the Riuer with much danger of drowning, by reaſon of the depth: They had not rode aboue two houres, but after they met a Country Swaine, running forwards and looking backwards ſo fearfully, as if he had beene nearely purſued. Fellow, ſayd Perſicles, what ayleſt thou? Sir, quoth he, I met with three the monſtrous Creatures that euer I beheld, carrying a Lady that made wonderfull Lamentation. Hearing that, they poſted downe the way which was beaten plaine: at laſt the ſame parted into two wayes, being doubtfull which of them to ſeeke, at laſt they concluded to part, embracing each other, as if they ſhould not meet againe: Perſicles on the right hand and Montelyon on the left. Of whoſe ſeuerall aduentures, ſtrange accidents befell.

Perſicles rode on with great ſwiftneſſe, not once able to ſet eye on them, for that way they went not, therefore he ſpent much labour in vaine, vntill it drew to night, and then he thought it vaine to ſeeke them, wandring along to ſeeke ſome conuenient place to reſt in which he could not doe, for thoſe Deſarts were vninhabited. At laſt drawing neere vnto a rocky hill, he might eſpye a glimmering light, as it were to ſhine through the hollow Cliffes thereof, and thitherwards he drew, perceiuing it to be ſome poore habitation, he alighted, tying his horſe to a buſh, and knocking at the doore, which of it ſelfe opened, he eſpyed an aged old man ſitting ouer a little fire in which he was buſily turning of Rootes which he roſted. Who caſting

casting vp his eyes, and espying Pericles, sayd to him: Come in good Knight, Distresse I know hath brought you hither, else would you not walke those Desarts so late. Pardon me good Father, quoth he, this bold intrusion: You guesse aright of my estate, for I have wandred out of my way, and sought long for some habitation, but was frustrated, vntill I was drawne hither by the light of your Candle, Sir (sayd the old man) you are welcome, and I would I were able to comfort you in some good sort, but such as this my poore habitation yeildeth, if you please to stay this night, shall be at your command. Neyther are you the first that hath beene entertained thus by me, therefore disdaine me not, nor my good will. Father, quoth he, I gratefully accept your good offer, and thank you for this kindnes, that exceedeth my desert, or meanes to requite: and the rather I desire your company and conference, for that I am but a stranger in these countries, and would gladly heare something thereof by your report. Sir quoth the old man, first sit downe, and take such spare dyet as my store affordeth, and afterwards I will be ready to declare what I can to satisfie you. Which when they had done, the Hermite thus began.

Sir, I shall first discouer what I am, and the cause of my liuing in this desolate obscure place: and withall discouer those things that (you may suppose) are beyond my knowledge: For no want, misfortune, nor feare of being discouered, hath made me chuse this kind of life, but mine owne voluntary fancy, which perswadeth I can no other way liue, so well agreeing with my vnfortunate disposition: neither would I haue you thinke I intend to fill your eares with idle prattle or repetition of toyes, but as I intend to ease your heart of some of the care it possesseth: So I desire you by hearing my misfortune, and auoiding my estate, to ease me, or at least, to comfort me with some hope of your fauourable assistance: for I know your name, your Countrey, your cause of trauell, your meanes of remedy, and your successe hereafter: which I will declare vnto you, after your patience hath heard out my tragicke History, which I can not chuse but vtter first. Pericles wondred to heare his speech, little thinking he could performe what he promised, but yet determining to try him, and desirous of comfort, he intreated him to proceed, for he was desirous to heare his discourse. Sir, sayd the Hermite,

my name in my flourihing eſtate was called Delatus, my dignity the Dukedome of Ila, which I enjoyed many yeares in great quiet being both enriched in the guifts of Fortune, and of Nature: for in my youth I chanced to ſet my affection on the beauty of Alſala, Daughter vnto a Gentleman of Antiochia, not for her poſſeſſions, but for her beauty, which ſurpaſſed all the Ladies of the South parts of this Continent. I ſued long and at laſt attained her conſent, maryed her, and brought her into Ila, where I liued with her a yeare in great quiet and content: being within that ſpace enriched with a Daughter, naming her Philotheta, in her Infancy ſhewing that more yeares would perfourme in her more erquiſite beauty, which is the Virgin that you now trauell in ſearch of. Liuing in this bliſſefull content, there chanced a Knight named Amphiador to take a view of my faire Alſalaes beauty, which at the firſt ſight pierced ſo deepe that he was entangled therewith, and laboured by all meanes to grow into Familiarity, thereby to enjoy more fully her ſight, and company: Fortune and my ſelfe ſo fauouring him, that I eſteemed ſo well of his company, that I thought my ſelfe not well when he was from me: He on the other ſide ſeeming ſo much to affect me that I admired his kindneſſe. All this time did he inſinuate himſelfe into Alſalaes company, ſhe likewiſe eſteeming ſo honourably of him, that by reaſon of the loue betwixt him and me, & her owne little ſuſpect of his diſloyall dealing, ſhe at all times admitted him her company, and vſed him ſo kindly and familiarly, that ſhe made him priny to moſt of her ſecret counſels. Notwithſtanding, all this, he durſt not manifeſt his loue to her, ſeeing indeed her vertues to be ſuch, that he thought it impoſſible to attaine it, thinking it better rather to liue in ſilence and enjoy her company, then by vttering his affection to be depriued of all comfort. Vpon a time likewiſe, as he did, there arriued at my Caſtle an other Knight, named Palleſus, whom in the ſame manner that he had done, ſurfeited on my Alſalaes beauty, and was both admitted mine and Amphiadors company: both of vs eſteeming well of him for many honourably qualities, that he was endued withall. He as little ſuſpecting Ampiadors loue as he did his, nor I my ſelfe, nor Alſala once thinking any ſuch matter, for that one kindnes bred in vs familiarity, that many paſſionate and amorous actions might be acted: and yet on no

ſide

ſtde ſuſpected. Thus did I liue in great content ſome two yeares, ſpending the time in Hawking, Hunting, and other paſtimes, as voyd of diſquiet as heart could wiſh, thinking my ſelfe happy in their kindneſſe, but moſt in my faire Alſalaes loue. They with coloured courteſie ſeeming to liue by enioying my good company and familiarity, and ſhe as much as I eſteeming them for their loue. But at laſt this pleaſant Summer began to turne to Winter, and our ſweet content to diſcontent, for Palleſus loue burſt into a flame, which he was vnable to reſtraine, that in ſecret ſort he gaue my Alſala knowledge thereof, which was as delightfull for her to heare, as it is for one to heare that he hath drunke poyſon: but notwithſtanding, her mind being endued with courteſie, and her Soule with Vertue, in kind ſort ſhe reproued him, wiſhing him not to proſecute any ſuch matter, for ſhe would neuer yeeld thereto. Notwithſtanding her courteous denyall bred in him no remorſe, but rather a hope of comfort, that continually he followed his ſute, which bred an exceeding trouble and diſquiet in her heart, that whereas ſhe was before delightfully pleaſant, ſhe became oftentimes ſo melancholy and ſad that I wondred thereat, but could not learne the cauſe thereof, thinking it had beene rather ſome ſickneſſe then paſſion of mind. Being long in this ſort troubled with his loue, ſhe began to deuiſe how to be rid of it, but ſo as it might not come to my knowledge: for vertuous loue made her loth to diſquiet me, relying vpon Amphiadors vertues, ſhe thought by his aſſiſtance to rid her ſelfe of Palleſus: and therefore on a time, being with him alone in ſecret, ſhe declared the whole circumſtance of all to him, declaring his counſell and diſſwade Palleſus from intending me ſuch diſhonour. Amphiadors heart was ſuddenly poſſeſt with a ielous conceit againſt the ſayd Palleſus: but withall he meant by that meanes to attaine his deſire, therefore comming to Palleſus, he told him what Alſala had made him priuy vnto, not diſſwading him, but counſelling him to perſiſt therein, promiſing he would by all the meanes he could further the ſame. Palleſus was ſomewhat comforted therewith, and Alſala was more chearefull, as hoping by Amphiadors meanes to be rid of her Louer.

Amphiador one day, being alone with me in my Forreſt, firſt vſing many intreaties to me to be ſecret, and binding me by

many oathes, without his aduice, not to declare it to any: he told me that Palleſus did make loue to Alſala, and that it was likely ſhe would yéld thereto, giuing me knowledge that oftentimes they met in ſecret, and withall counſelling me but to note their glances and behauiours, and I ſhould finde that to be true which I then leaſt thought of: Protetting that meere loue to me, regard of mine Honor, and his owne duty, bound him to diſcouer that, which otherwiſe he would neuer haue reuealed. With this my mind was much diſquieted, neuertheleſſe I would not too raſhly giue credit to his ſpéeches, before I had obſerued their behauiour ſome time, which I found to be ſomewhat familiar, on déepe affection on his part, but on hers, with a contrary intent, leſt her countenance ſhould bewray his loue to me, which ſhe knew would breed my diſquiet: by reaſon of Amphiadors perſwaſions, who continually augmented my ſuſpicion, I verily began to ſuſpect them, and grew to extreame ielouſie, aſſuring my ſelfe they dealt diſloyally with me, purpoſing to worke reuenge againſt them, but then he began to perſwade me to be well aduiſed, and not to condemne them without manifeſt proofe: as much perſwading me from thinking ſo, as he had before done to perſwade me thereto: but then nothing could alter my mind, my behement ſuſpect neither ſuffering me to be quiet, nor yet to find his deceit: ſo that one day being alone, I complained againſt my hard Fortune, and her diſloyalty: in midſt of which complaints he found me out, intending by myſuerthrow to worke his owne deſire. I ſéeing him ſo neare me, after much conference deſired him as a Friend to counſell me the beſt way to ſaue theſe euils, to be aſſured of the truth, and yet to doe it without mine owne reproach, or her ſcandall: for that I was loth to accuſe her without iuſt proofe.

If I may quoth he, préſume to counſell you, thus would I aduiſe you to doe: the King is now ſicke, and hath ſent for many of his nobles to come to him: ſay you likewiſe that you haue receiued Letters from him, and that you muſt thrée dayes hence depart towards the Court: By this you ſhall eaſily find out the truth hereof, for at the time of your departure, deſire Palleſus to beare you company: which if he refuſe you may then iudge of him accordingly: My ſelfe will then accompany you vnto my Caſtle, wherein you ſhall remaine in ſecret ſome certaine dayes, and I in a diſguiſe, vnknowne of any, will returne

and

and by my faithfull diligence, will from time to time note their behauiour, and so find the truth thereof. I liked well of his counsell, and followed the same, making my departure knowne to Alisia, who with a heauy heart lamented to heare of my absence, which then by reason of my suspect I esteemed to be dissimulation. Amphiador in the meane time went to Pallesus, and told him that I intended by reason of some conceit or suspition, I had lately conceiued, to carry him with me vnto the Court: and therefore he willed him to be absent at that instant. The time of my departure being come, I thought to try Pallesus, but he was gone, which augmented my suspition to a resolution: but intending to try the vttermost of all, and trusting to Amphiadors faithfull dealing, I went with him vnto his Castle, staying there some three dayes: in the meane time (I thinking he had beene returned to my Castle) he went to an Enchanter named Penthrasus, and brought him to my Castle, shewing him Philotheta, promising him, that if he would but worke meanes to rid me away, that I might neuer returne, when she came to yeres, to procure her to consent to his loue. Penthrasus at the first sight liked the proffer, and promising to vndertake the same, taking a solemne oath neuer to discouer the same. Now fearing least some other should preuent him, and to anoyd his Wiues suspition, who had great knowledge in Negromancy, and often by her skill, crost his practises, and withall vnwilling to be any way guilty of blood, after I was deliuered to him, he brought me into this place, casting such charmes and incantations vpon me, that I shall neuer be released: which when he had done, he told me the cause why he had done it, and withall Amphiadors practice against me, I then intreated him to release me, promising him to fulfill whatsoeuer Amphiador had promised him: but no perswasion could preuaile, for he told me he had bound himselfe by a solemne vow to performe it, which he could not breake, for if he did, with that he should loose the vertue of his Art. Then did I lament my misfortune with bitter exclaimes: but he told me it was in vaine, and so departed. Here did I line many yeares, vntill I was quite past all hope of comfort, thinking to end my dayes in this place, without euer hearing of them againe: but at last Penthrasus came to me againe, rehearsing the sequell of this History as followeth.

Amphiador

Amphiador being ſure enough of me, returned to my Caſtle, and comming to Alſala, after long circumſtance and proteſtations, told, that the day that I went from thence, Palleſus having before complotted ſuch a ſtratagem, had ſet upon me with an ambuſh of men, and ſlaine me, telling the ſame with ſuch proteſtations and probabilities of truth, that Alſala could not chuſe but beléeue him, counſelling her in ſecret to apprehend him, and caſt him in priſon. Alſala had much adoe to keepe life within her body, having ſcarce breath enough to command her ſeruants to apprehend him, whileſt Amphiador laboured with ſuch as were about her to keepe life in her.

The rumour of my death was ſoone ſpread abroad, and my ſeruants beléeuing the ſame, ſome poſted to the Court, ſome ſearched for my body, neyther finding me aliue nor dead, for which Amphiador ſtill had an accuſation: ready to ſatisfie any doubt, Palleſus hearing that it was Amphiador accuſed him, and for no leſſe matter then my death, according as he well might, denyed the ſame, by oftentreaties deſiring Alſala, to let him be admitted to his tryall: but ſhe overſwayed by Amphiadors perſwaſions, being before troubled with Palleſus loue, whereby he ſought to diſhonour me& that was his friend, which bred a perſwaſion in her, that to attaine that, he ſought my life, would giue no credit to him: but reſolued he would dye, And within few dayes apparrelling her ſelfe, her ſeruants, and all her attendants in mournefull weedes, ſhe departed towards the Court, craning juſtice of the King againſt Palleſus for murdering me: the King told her ſhe ſhould haue juſtice, Palleſus was brought before the King, and there accuſed by Amphiador, he alleadging what falſe accuſations he could, and the other ſtill pleading his innocency, that in the end Amphiador deſired the King to graunt him the Combate againſt Palleſus, which ſhould end the doubt of this Controuerſie. The King granted it, and appoynted a day for the tryall. In which cruell fortune ſo ordered the iſſue, that Palleſus was ſlaine, and all men accounted him guilty, and me dead, yéelding much honour to Amphiador, and the King in recompence of his ſuppoſed loyalty to me, and for that I dyed without an heyre, created him Duke of it, yet reſeruing the liuing to Alſala, during her life. This being done, Alſala returned towards

towards Ila and Amphyador with her, but very ſore Wounded: of whom he had a moſt eſpeciall care, tendring him as her ſelfe, for the Loue he had ſhowne her in becomming her Champion for reuenge of my Death.

After he had recouered his Wounds, he continued many dayes with her, not once motioning any Loue to her, ſeeming with her to mourne for my loſſe: But as all things by Time weare out of Remembrance, ſo did her ſorrow of me, and ſhe beganne to conceyue well of him: Which he perceiuing, proſecuted his Loue with ſuch ſucceſſe, that in the end he married her, and euer ſince hath liued with her: Which when Penthraſus declared vnto me, it attained my heart with deadly griefe. Then I deſired him to releaſe me from that miſery. Neyther doe I intend to claime the performance of Amphiadors promiſe, for that Philotheta was Fayre, Chaſte, and Vertuous: Neither will I reueale this ſecret to any but your ſelfe, nor ſhall you depart from hence, vntill the aduenture of the enchanted Tower be ended, built by Helyon, wherein he hath ſhut Conſtantia, Daughter to the King of Perſia, and betroathed Wife to Perſicles King of Aſſyria: Who ſhall be the firſt Knight that ſhall arriue in this place: Neither ſhall that Enchauntment be ended by any but Perſicles Sonne, begotten of Conſtantia: For (qd. he) the date of my Life is neare an end: and at ſuch time as Perſicles arriueth here (Will him, when he hath heard this report) to returne into Aſſiria, to eſtabliſh his Kingdome in Peace: For it will be in vaine for him to ſpend his Dayes in trauell to Redæme her, the finiſhing thereof muſt be by his owne Sonne. When he had ſpoken theſe words he vaniſhed, appoynting me to a certaine bound which I cannot paſſe, nor any yet came into but onely your ſelfe, which aſſureth me that you are Perſicles, and trauell in ſearch of Conſtantia. You haue (ſaid Perſicles) filled my heart with Feare, Hope, and Comfort, the one ſtriuing to ouer-maſter the other feare, that the Enchaunter diſſembled: For that I haue as yet no Sonne, nor neuer ſhall haue by Conſtantia: for ſhe being ſtill Enchaunted, how ſhall I attaine her company? Yet againe I am ſomewhat comforted, that he could as well tell who ſhould finiſh the Enchantment he had made, as of my comming to this place: for I am the moſt forlorne King of Aſſyria, that ſhall neuer enioy comfort vntill ſhe be releaſed,

which doubt perſwadeth me will neuer be: For if I muſt now returne into Aſſyria, how ſhall I hope to finde comfort? Yet be of good comfort, quoth Delatus: for hope hath preſerued my life many yeares: aſſuring me ſelfe that Penthraſus tolde me nothing but what was true, and ſhall aſſuredly come to paſſe, both your comfort, and my long looked-for Releaſement, being appointed both to one houre. Why ſhould you then deſpayre more then I, ſince both our comforts reſteth on her releaſe? But according to his counſell, trauell no further, for it were vayne to doe that which can yéld no hope of comfort.

In doing that (quoth Perficles,) I ſhall both diſhonour my ſelfe, and leaue my Friend vnkindly, whoſe deſerts hath bound my life to requite his Loue: he hath onely for my ſake vndertaken to trauell in Conſtantias ſearch: the cauſe of whoſe departure from me, was in ſearch of your Daughter Philotheta, that is reputed Daughter to Amphiador, who was this day ſtolne from Ila, by certayne Gyants: Then he declared how they came to knowledge thereof. It did him good to heare that ſhe was liuing, inſomuch that he reioyced exceedingly thereat: Willthall, enquiring of him what Knight that was, that was gone in her reſcue. Perficles then ſaid, it were too tedious to make Recitall of him: for then I ſhould rehearſe the diſcourſe of my miſfortunes. Were it not (quoth Delatus,) troubleſome to you, I would earneſtly require your fauour to heare it. To requite your kindneſſe (quoth he) I will rehearſe the ſame, which yet I haue concealed from all men but Montelyon. With that hée declared the whole hiſtorie, from the beginning of his firſt Loue to Conſtantia, vntill that houre. Which when he had heard, his heart was filled with Admiration, who that Knight Montelion ſhould bée, his Fancie perſwading him hée ſhould end the Enchantment, had not the doubt that he was Perficles ſome giuen likelyhood of the contrary. The night was ſpent in theſe diſcourſes, and bright Phœbus lightned the darkeneſſe of that Deſart, Perficles neither willing to depart nor ſtay: ſometimes minding to finde out Montelyon, and to bid him Farewell: but at laſt perſwaded by Delatus, taking his leaue of him with many Farewels, he mounted his Steede, and ſo departed directly towards Aſſyria.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

Of a Combat *Montelyon* fought againſt three Gyants, and how he reſcued *Philotheta*. And what befell them in an Hermits Cell.

MOntelyon being parted from Perſicles, haſted with more then ordinary pace after Philotheta, ſtill having intelligence which way they went, by ſuch as met them: he ouertooke them about the ſetting of the Euening: vſing few words vntill he had dealt ſome blowes, running at the hindermoſt with ſo fierce a carriere, that he ouerturned him with his heeles vpwards, the other two looking behinde them, beganne to laugh at their fellowes fortune, thinking that he had receiued that fall by chance: but looking further, they eſpyed Montelyon running ſo violently againſt the ſecond, that had he not auoyded the point of his Launce, he had ſeconded his fellow, at light on worſe fortune. With that one of them ſayd: This fellow is very bolde now, but hee will truſt to his heeles anon. This ſayd the firſt that was ouerthrowne, ran towards Montelyon, offering ſuch a forcible blow at him, that had he not ſpard his ſtreed to anoyd him, he had eyther ſlayne him as his horſe, but he knowing it better, to fight on foot then on horſe-backe, alighted, whilſt the Gyant came towards him againe, thinking at one blow to beat him in peices: the other two ſeeing him on foote, went away laughing, but the Gyant miſſing his ayme, by reaſon of Montelyons nimbleneſſe, was ready to turne about, with the force of his compaſſe blow: in which time Montelyon leapt within him, and thruſt his ſword ſo farre into his Body, that he fell downe dead: the other two hearing that, one of them came running backe to reſcue him, whom Montelyon ſoone eſpyed, being ready to receiue him: and ſeeing no more ons, but one to one, thought his Combat was not vnequall. The Gyant ſeeing the other dead, thought at once to end Montelyons life, that he ſtroke at him with all his force, but he auoyded his blow not yet daring to come within him, vntill he was ſomewhat out of breath, being furious for reuenge, but more mad to miſſe ſo many blowes, he ſtrooke ſo full and violently at Montelyon, that his maſſy

Clubbe ſtucke in the earth, which whileſt he laboured to pull out, Montelyon ſtroke him ſo full a blow on the arme, that he cut the ſame quite from his body, wherewith hée gaue ſuch an exceéding greane, that all the place rung with the noyſe thereof, running away as faſt as he could towards Montelyons ſteéd, whom he affrighted much with his griſly and bluſtering approach, that he brake in ſunder the reynes of his bridle, and ranne away with great ſwiftneſſe: Montelyon was exceédingly vexed for want of his ſteéd, not knowing for want of him what to doe: and by reaſon of the nights approach he ſtill purſued the Gyant, keeping him within ſight ſo long as he could, which at laſt he loſt: Seeing himſelfe ſo diſappointed, and vnhorſt, he began to ſtudy what to doe: at laſt being paſt hope of eyther finding them, or recouering his horſe, by reaſon of the darkneſs of the night, he went wandring vp and downe to ſéeke a place of reſt, and by chance lighted on a wood into which he entred, but fearing to reſt, leaſt ſome wilde beaſt might deuoure him, he wandred on, with purpoſe to paſſe through the ſame, where ſuddenly he heard the ſound of a big voyce, which made him ſtand ſtill & liſten, & with ſoft ſteppes drawing thitherwards, he perceiued it was the Gyants, that curſt and band him for croſſing their iourney. What ſhall wée doe, qd. one of them, ſhall we ſtay here, or no? Wée ſhall wander I know not whether, a plague vpon that white diuell that haunted vs. I am ſure he is no man, for we are men, and one man ſhould be as good in fight as another, but you two like Cowardly ſlaues, haue ſuffered ſuch a wretch to haue aduantage againſt you. Hold thy prating qd. the other, thou couldeſt haue done no more then we: thou néedeſt not vexe me, I am vext enough with the loſſe of mine arme. Let vs reſt here vntill it be day, and then we will away, for he hath worke enough to find his horſe.

Philotheta was ſo affrighted with feare, that ſhe lay like one in a dead traunce, to whom one of them ſayd. Sweét Philotheta, bée not diſcomforted nor offended with mée, I haue loued thee long, and long expected this happy houre to enioy thée: be content to lodge on the cold earth one night for my ſake, that haue loſt many a nights ſleepe for thine: neyther ſhalt thou lye on the earth, for my body ſhall be thy bed, whileſt mine armes imbrace thée: Then did he take her in his Armes, beſtowing many a loathſome ſlauering kiſſe vp-

on:

on her, but she for feare durst not cry, being almost dead with griefe. Montelyon stood and heard all their unreuerent vsage, wishing it were day, that he might reuenge their disloyalty. They had not laine long, but first the one and then the other fell fast a sleepe, which Montelyon easily perceyued by their routing, thinking it no discredit to slaughter such miscreants that delighted in no knightly action, but in wrong and oppression: there with drawing vnto them, Philotheta espyed him, and at the first sight by reason of his white armour knew him: desirous she was to speake to him, but feare to awake her keeper withheld her, and yet she knew the care of her affright, detained him from reuenge: At the last, so boldly as she durst, she lifted vp her hand beckning Montelyon to her, and poynting to the grant: Montelyon vnderstanding her meaning, thrust his sword into him that had her foulded in his armes, who striuing with the pang, gaue her liberty to leape from him, roaring forth such a groane, as all the wood rung therewith, and his fellow halfe amazed, started vp ready to run away, but Montelyons sword ouertaking his hindermost legge, at one blow cut in sunder the sinewes, and he fell downe, holding vp his hands for mercy: Montelyon with the next blow pierced his braines, and so he dyed a most miserable death.

The other had receyued no deadly wound, for the point of his sword lighting vpon one of his ribbes, was stayed from ending his life: who whilest Montelyon was slaughtering the other, had recouered his staffe, bending a full blow at Montelyon, who by good Fortune and Philothetaes shrike, turned about, and espying the same comming, broke halfe the force, and running in withall, ran his sword quite through his aduersaries body, and with the bruise he had receiued, fell downe himselfe in a traunce.

Philotheta thought he had beene dead, running to him with great striuing, with her tender hands to vnbuckle his Beauer, and vnlace his Helmit to giue him breath: which though long, yet at last she attained, but in vaine: for hee lay as a man quite bereft of life: her Lamentations were such as would haue turned reuenge to remorse, and those senceleſſe trees into teares, yea the Birds hearing her moane, left off their pleasant notes to listen her complaints, the very Earth seemed to weepe to receyue her moystned teares, and all the empty ayre resounded, as repleat with her waylinge. Aye-

me vnfortunate creature (quoth ſhe) to be the cauſe of ſo worthy a Knights death: How ſhall my vnhappy life make recompence for his loſſe? It had beene better theſe ſauage and inhumane monſters had deuoured me, then this Knight ſhould haue loſt his life in my reſcue: better it had beene that I had dyed in my cradle, then to liue to ſee this diſmall day, though he be a ſtranger to me and I haue had no tryall in his vertues, yet his actions ſhew the honour of his minde: his valour, his noble education, and his courteſie, his worthy birth: I know by his armour he is not of Arabia, his honourable minde, not hope of requitall, procuring him to venture his life in my reſcue, which he hath too vntimely both hazarded and loſt: which no doubt, will be as great a loſſe to his Country and friends, as euer any endured. Were he once reuiued, I would not care what became of my ſelfe, nor needed I to care, for his vertuous valour would ſhrowd me from iniuries, and be as ſafe a harbour as ſecurity can afford. Her Lamentations could not ſo end, but ſhe lengthened them ſometimes with weeping, ſometimes with lamenting: and then againe ready to drowne her ſorrowfull heart in ſalt teares. Aye me (ſaid ſhe) what ſhall now become of me? How ſhall I eſcape further miſerie? Here I am left alone ready to be deuoured of wilde beaſts, yet what neede I feare any miſchiefe, when ſo great miſeries is befalne me, as greater cannot be. Her laments conducted the ſteps of an aged Hermit that dwelt in thoſe woods, vnto the place where ſhe lay weeping ouer Montelion. She ſuddenly eſpying him, being halfe affrighted, ſaid. If thou be a man pitty me, and helpe me to reuiue this Knight. If thou beeſt a Ghoſt thinke not to affright me, for I am already full of feare, and if thou beeſt neither, then tell me what thou art? Damzell, ſaid he, feare not, for I am a liuing creature, as thou art, I pitty thy diſtreſſe, and will doe my beſt to helpe you. With that he kneeled downe by Montelyon rubbing his cheekes, and laying his hand vpon his breſt, felt ſome ſigne of life in him, and ſeeking for an herbe which preſently he found, he bruiſed the ſame, letting the iuyce fall into his Noſtrils. with the vertue whereof his vitall ſences returned to their former operations, and his eyes receyued their light: With that raiſing himſelfe vp vpon his arme, he ſayd: I perceyue I haue troubled you, and as it were halfe aſhamed of himſelfe, he deſired her not to be diſquieted with his miſfor-

tune,

time. Philotheta's heart reioyced to ſee him reuiued, now he was reuiued, not ſo well knowing what to ſay, as ſhe did when he was in his Trance, but her vertue and his deſert conſtraining her, ſhe could doe no leſſe then vtter theſe ſpeeches. Sir Knight, your courteſie ſo farre beyond my deſert, bindeth me to yeild you thanks, and thanks is an vnſufficient requitall for your paines, although I know you not, nor neuer ſaw you vntill this day, yet your valour and courteſie in deliuering me from Captiuity, hath bound me to become gratefull, and deſerueth more recompence then I am able to yeild. Lady, (ſaid Montelyon.) the Heauens haue aſſiſted you, not my Valour: which I haue attempted without expectation of recompence: If you thinke well of my paines, it is all the reward I craue.

The olde Hermit perceiuing ſome ſtrange accident had brought them thither, deſired them, for that Montelion was ſore bruiſed, and ſhe much affrighted and diſquieted, to accept of his Cell to reſt them in, vntill they could take better order for their ſafety. Montelyon thanked him (ſaying, he was pleaſed, ſo it liked the Lady) With that they began to goe, but Montelyon, by reaſon of his ſore bruiſe, with much a doe could ſtand: The Hermit taking him by the arme, ſupported him, whileſt he with griefe, that his misfortunes had brought him to ſuch a low eſtate, ſaid: It ill beſemeth Youth to be ſupported by Age: but no man can preuent Deſtiny. Philotheta offered to lend him her arme, but he deſired her not to trouble her ſelfe. Sir ſaid the Hermit, refuſe not her courteſie, for in time of neede it is not good to be curious. With that ſhe lent him her arme, but he tooke her hand, and that he thought too much boldneſſe, as the other trouble, ſtriuing againſt the weakneſs he had receiued by his bruiſe, to goe vpright: ſhe likewiſe wondred that Nature had wrought ſuch a familiar regard in her, towards him ſhe knew not: often accuſing herſelfe of Lightneſſe, and bluſhing when he graſped her tender hand, that with feare, and Fancies ſtriuing mouſtned his Palme: thinking with her ſelfe. How is my eſtate altered, that to day was free from care, and ſo ſuddenly brought to Bondage, and from bondage to this diſquiet, and all in a moment? I am now like one that is content with miſery, and yet diſcontented with that Content: I could wiſh my ſelfe from hence and yet were I gone, I ſhould wiſh my ſelfe then here againe, becauſe I deſire this Knights Welfare:

and

And yet me thinkes I ſhould not be too Familiar, and yet I know he hath deſerued much more courteſie then I can proffer. My minde is affected with a regard of his welfare, and yet am perſwaded I ſhould not doe ſo: and if I ſhould not doe it, he might accuſe me of diſcourteſie: and if I be too kinde, he may deeme me too affable. I would faine know my diſquyet, and yet me thinkes I am not diſquieted, feeling my minde troubled and know not why, deſiring to ſhake it off, but not knowing how: it is regard of him, not of my ſelfe that troubleth me, and yet I neither know how to thinke well of him without my owne diſquyet, nor how to be quyet without him: many ſuch like cogitations poſſeſt her fancie: that and other things for her part ſhorting the way to the Cell, where they arriued: The Hermit giuing Montelyon a Potion of certaine commixed Drugges, which comforted him greatly, and Philotheta, a cup of Greekiſh-Wine, which reuiued and quickned her affrighted heart: There was no light in the roome: therefore as yet neither of them had ſeene each other: Montelyon wiſht the day would appeare, that he might behold her Beauty: and ſhe, that ſhe might beholde whether his perſon were agreeable to his prowelle: and the Hermit deſiring to ſee what gueſſe he had entertayned. Seeing them both ſilent, the one abſtained for griefe, the other for Modeſty: after he had ſeated them on ſoft Rushes and Flagges, he ſayd: As it ſeemeth to me, you are eyther of you Strangers to each other, which maketh me deſirous to know what accident hath befallen you? Father (repired Montelyon) indeed we are ſo: for as yet I neuer beheld this Ladyes countenance, yet I know her name is Philotheta, Daughter to the Duke of Ila: Which knowledge I got by this meanes: As then I and another Knight were Trauelling in ſearch of a Lady, that hath long time bin miſſing, we chanced to eſpye two Damzels clad in white, paſſing by vs with great ſpeed, with whom I entred communication, and they told me that this Lady Philotheta was taken away from them by three Gyants, I returned to my Friend with this newes, and both of vs poſted after them, vntill at a Croſſe-way we parted, thinking if they went eyther way, we ſhould ouertake them, but it was my good fortune to light on them, and by their deathes to free this Lady, thinking my labour well beſtowed to redeeme her from their treachery. Philotheta refrained her ſpeech, onely thinking him, fea-

ring

king, leſt ſhe ſhould ſeeme more courteous then modeſty would permit, or more coy then vertue required. Sir, ſayd the Hermit, I know thoſe Gyants, and the manner of their life to be moſt inhumane, and wicked, whoſe habitation is not farre off in the Deſart of Arabia, by whoſe death, this Country is freed from much outrage, which they have, and would daily have committed. Sir quoth Montelyon, I pray what Country is this? It is ſayd he, Arabia. Doth not Helion ſayd he, raigne as King? Sir quoth he, he did raigne as King, but whether he be now living or no, it is doubtfull: for ſome ſuppoſe he is dead, others ſay, he is Enchanted in a Tower he built himſelfe, ſituate not farre hence, from which he cannot be releaſed, untill the Enchantment be ended, which many Knights of ſtrange Countryes have adventured, but none could finiſh: the cauſe of building thereof, as yet no man can tell. Philotheta having before heard thereof, weary with that dayes travell, whileſt they were in communication, fell aſleepe, which Montelyon perceiving, remitted their communication till the Morning, being unwilling to awake her with they're noyſe.

The firſt that awaked was the Hermit, who went out to gather certains hearbes, leaving them both ſleeping, who both at once awaked, at the firſt bluſhing at each others ſight, he wondring at her exceeding beauty, and ſhe at his exquiſite perſon, he comparing the Damzels report to her beauty, and her other gifts thereto, which he ſuppoſed beyond conceit. And ſhe comparing his valor with his youth, and his courteſie with both, thought her eye never beheld his equall: ſtanding as it were both enchanted with the other, neither being able long to withhold their eyes from each others ſight, both noting each others behaviour, till Montelyon aroſe, and ſhe did the like, he firſt breaking ſilence, uttering theſe ſpeeches.

Faire Lady, now that the Sun hath vaniſhed the milky Cloudes of night, you need not feare any miſhap, for your enemies being dead, I thinke there is none living of ſo inhumane a diſpoſition, that would diſquiet you. For my ſelfe, my life, and all that I have, reſteth at your command.

Sir Knight, replyed ſhe, I thanke you for your kindneſſe paſt, and now proffered, which hath rid me from that I was in, and out of feare of other miſhap to come, for your Vertues have

authority againſt wicked actions, and your valour a ſufficient defence againſt your enemies. Before any further ſpeeches paſt, the Hermit came, bringing in his hand the hearbs he had gathered, ſome of which he ſtamped into juyce, and ſtrained, giuing Montelyon to drinke, others he boyled on the fire, making thereof a moſt dainty dish, which when they had taſted, the Hermite: Though I know you find your ſelfe of ſufficient ſtrength, yet by my counſell trauell not this day, for that thereby you may much impaire your health. My ſelfe ſo pleaſeth this Lady, will ſend a Meſſenger to Ila, to report her ſafety in this place. Not ſo replyed Montelyon, my ſelfe (ſo pleaſe her to accept of my ſeruice) will attend her thither: which if it pleaſe her I will preſently doe.

Sir ſaid ſhe, I would not haue you endanger your health for my ſake that am in ſafety, vntill ſuch time as you are perfectly recouered. Then ſayd the Hermite you ſhall not in this place want any thing, nor feare diſquiet, for here hath ſecurity dwelt many dayes, being my ſelfe glad my poore Cell can yeild you any content. The Hermit went forth to get Prouiſion, leauing them together in his Cell, whoſe eyes were drunke with a ſurfetting ſuruey of each others perfections, her beauty being ſuch, as might not be equalled by any: And his proportion beſides his youths beauty, and other comelineſſe of ſuch forme, as would pleaſe any Ladies eye, which ſuperficiall view of the eye, conducted an inſtance of Loue into each others part, which ſetled it ſelfe in that vertuous harbour with ſuch conſtancy, that it was impoſſible to be removed: neither daring each others ſo fortunate, to agree in ſuch a ſympathy of Loue, he thinking ſhe would not loue, and ſhe perſwading her ſelfe he had already ſetled his Loue on that Lady he went in ſearch of. He not knowing which way to frame his ſute on ſo ſmall acquaintance, nor ſhe, how to ſhew him fauour without further tryall. She firſt breaking ſilence with a heart-breathing ſigh bred from the depth of meditation, whereupon he tooke occaſion to ſay. Lady, that ſigh betrayeth ſome diſquiet of mind that troubleth you, the occaſion whereof, my ſmall acquaintance and vnworthineſſe to be ſo bold, withholdeth me from enquiring, but if you would yeild me ſuch fauour as impart your ſecrets to me, I would proue ſo faithfull and diligent to pleaſure you, that you ſhould commend my willingneſſe

though

though not my ability : For my heart wisheth my tongue to vtter that which my Fancy perswadeth me from : not for that they disagree, but for that my heart harboureth that which my fancy biddeth me not vtter, because it feareth you will not beleeue it, and yet you might beleeue it if it were of more antiquity : for it is commonly holden for truth, that all things of Antiquity are permanent, which neuer would haue beene if they had not first begun in youth, youth being the first foundation, the foundation is then constant, then things though young of growth contains circumstancy, which being cherished grow to perfection.

So Lady, if I might without your misconceit, discouer the constant zeale of your perfections that is rooted in my heart, and finde some sparke of your gentle fauour to cowfort it, it would grow to such setled resolution, that nothing should remoue it, but if in the first Spring it be blasted with Disfauour, it will then spread it selfe into all parts of my Sences, tormenting euery part of me, vntill it be cherished by the dew of your kindnesse. I cannot protest, nor vow, nor sweare, that I haue loued long, yet if your suspect conuert not the truth of my well-meaning Words into distrust, I durst protest, vow, and sweare, that loue to your Perfections is setled in my heart and nothing can remoue it.

Nay (replyed she) should I credit your Words, or impart my secrets to you, it might be accounted too much credulity: yet without blame I might, it relying on your Vertues : or should I grant it were as you say, that Loue began in a moment, being the roote, is the substance, and therefore permanent, yet how would you thinke of one, if vpon so small probabilitie, I should thanke you for your good will, and accept thereof, not measuring me by your selfe, if you are constant, but measuring me by inconstancie, would iudge me light, as I may well account your words of course, yet as much good will as may grow in so short an acquaintance I beare you, measuring the same by your owne : for if you finde cause to loue me, I haue more cause to be thankfull vnto you for your kindnes that haue receiued good by you. But neither esteeme me light, for being so familiar, nor easily to be won because I am courteous: for should I be coy, you might account me vnmannerly, and not worthy to be affected as I haue beene by you.

Lady, replyed Montelyon, would I harbour a thought that might impeach the least title of your compleat vertue, I were worthy to be hated: For I know that truth is plaine, and needeth no coloured Phrases nor curiositie: which animateth me to enter into this bold conference with you, not framing my words of course, but of true devotion, trusting that your vertue will pardon my boldnesse, and your courtesie censure my meaning aright: for I finde in my selfe an unwonted alteration, which desire to be gracious in your sight, hath bred in me (Nature nor Art framing it) which I neither know how to manifest, nay dare by reason of the small continuance now, though my soule knoweth my hearts purity and consent thereto, fearing to be misconstrued of you: yet if you will vouchsafe to make triall of me, and grant me but to be your servant, in time to be tryed and censured according to my truth, I shal account my selfe most fortunate, that yet hope may be anchor of my comfort, one day to be gracious in your sight.

Sir (replyed she) how could I but blame my selfe, if I should yeild you any favour other then for your late paines, which shall bind me to requite it to my power: but love, being another subject, how should I give you any credit being a Stranger, altogether unknowne to me? Lady, said he, you may doe it, if your gentle heart will yeild thereto, though I am a Stranger both to you, and to my selfe, unknowne: for that I am you can witnesse, but who are my Parents the Heavens have yet concealed. My name if ever you heard thereof, is Montelyon: My cause of comming into this Countrey, was with Persicles King of Assyria, in search of Constantia, daughter to the King of Persia, his betrothed wife, by misfortune lost many yeares since: all that I know of my selfe I have told you, & I would I had never knowne my selfe, unlesse you favour me. Philotheta remembred that Amphiador in reciting the Warres twixt Persicles, and the King of Armenia, had made ample report of his valour, so much the more with that report loving him, yet she concealed the same from him, thinking though he were never so valiant, yet he might be inconstant: making unto him this answere.

Sir, because you shall not altogether accuse me of discourtesie, I will not quite deny your suite, nay in any respect grant it, untill more convenient time to make tryall thereof, neyther shall you name your selfe

ſelfe my ſeruant, for that you haue deſerued to be better rewarded, which hereafter you ſhall find.

Lady, quoth he, one fauour abſolutely granted, would now more comfort my heart, then many in ſuſpence, nor that I misdoubt your performance, but that long lingring paine in the meane time will pinch my heart: Therefore without misdoubt of truth, gratitude and conſtancy, intrich me but with one, though the leaſt comfortable anſwere.

Sir Knight, replyed ſhe, what in vertue I can grant, I will yeild you, though you may account me already prodigall in Fauour, and gentle in reply: yet ſhould I be ingratefull, you might blame me, or too prolixe you might condemne me: but as much good will as in ſo ſhort continuance may be, I beare you, and you ſhall finde me performe, for my heart would neuer ſuffer me till this, to conceiue ſo well of any as I doe of you: in vrging me further you ſhall make me ſuſpect you: conſideration of my late Misfortune, rather willing me to regard my returne to my Parents: but you may ſee your vertues haue ouermaſtered my miſtruſt, and a good opinion of you, hath made me truſt my ſelfe in your Cuſtody.

CHAP. XXIII.

How *Amphiador* arrived neere the Cell, and of the doubt that *Phylotheta* was driven into: And of the diſpleaſure that aroſe betweene *Montelyon* and *Amphiador*: and of *Phylothetaes* ſtrange departure.

As ſoone as ſhe had ended theſe words, the Hermit came in, which broke off their communication, and telling them how that Amphiador with a many followers were come into the Iſland, where the Giants lay dead. Philotheta then thought all care paſt, but ſuddenly remembring ſhe muſt part from Montelyon, her heart fainted with griefe, and her ſences were exceedingly troubled, for ſhe knew well Amphiador was ſo rude and ſuſpicious, that he would neither thanke him for his paines, nor inuite him to his Caſtle, for he had with like jealous conceits diſgraced others that had ſought her loue. Montelyon on the other ſide, ſtudyed what meanes to vſe,

ſtill to enjoy her company, and yet he thought it would turne to his diſhonour to follow loue, and leaue Perſicles ſearch for Conſtantia, and the knowledge of his Parents. But to rid them both out of their troubled thoughts, there entred three Knights in greene Armour, and without ſpeaking a word, two of them tooke Philotheta betwixt them, and led her out of the Cell. Montelyon ſtarted vp and drew his ſword, and following to reſcue her, but the third of them without ſpeaking ſtrooke at him, wherewith began a cruell combat. At laſt the greene Knight ſayd: Thou ſtriueſt in vaine, ſhe is paſt recouery. With that Montelyon looking about, ſaw them quite out of his ſight, marueilling they could ſo ſuddenly conuey her thence: If thou wilt finde her (quoth he) thou ſhalt find her amongſt the Heſperian Nymphes: which ſayd, he went away ſo faſt, that Montelyon thought it vaine to follow him. By this time Amphiador and his company were come to him: amongſt whom he eſpyed one leading his Steed, vnto whom he went and ſaid: Sir, this is my Steed, I pray thee deliuer him me: the Fellow denying him, he ſtrooke him a ſecond blow with his fiſt and ouerthrew him. Amphiador ſeeing that, ſayd: What art thou that ſo boldly ſtrikeſt my ſeruant? Montelyon being vexed with the loſſe of Philotheta anſwered, I will not now tell thee. Amphiador being likewiſe vexed with his ſcornefulneſſe, without more words drew his Sword, and ſtrooke at him: Montelyon thought to reuenge it, but ſuddainly remembring himſelfe, he ſayd: Were thou not Father to Philotheta, I would make thee repent thy ſelfe: Amphiador hearing him name Philotheta, would haue ſpoke to him againe, but Montelyon mounting his Steed rode away.

The Hermit ſeeing them at ſuch variance, came to Amphiador, giuing him knowledge of all that had hapned: But he rather beleeuing it was but ſome meere coloured excuſe for her eſcape, cauſed his ſeruants to binde the Hermit, intending by tortures to make him confeſſe more then he could. Montelyon remembring himſelfe when he had rode a good way, how ingratefully he had left the Hermit, turned backe, which he had no ſooner done, but he eſpyed him bound amongſt Amphiadors men, which vexed him ſo much that he drew his ſword again, and ſet vpon them, wounding ſome of them, and ſlaying others, that therewith Amphiador with his ſword drawn

ſtrooke

ſtroke him againe. By heauen, qd, Montelyon, ſtrike me the third time and thou dieſt. Notwithſtanding his words, Amphiador vexed for the death of his ſeruants, ſtroke him againe, whereuith Montelyon not onely defended himſelfe, but offended him ſo much that he had ſore wounded him, and had not his ſeruants with ſome of their liues borne off ſome blowes, he had ended his life: but notwithſtanding, he left him in a miſerable caſe, that his ſeruants had much adoe to keepe life in him, vntill they brought him home.

CHAP. XXV.

How *Montelyon* in his trauell arriued at the Flower of the *Heſperian* Nymphs. How euery one of them gaue him a ſeuerall gift and how they named him *Knight of the Oracle*.

MOntelyon hauing taken the Hermit, yeelding him many thankes for his kindneſſe, departed with ſo heauy a heart, that he could ſcarce ſpeake for griefe, trauelling he knew not whether, hauing ſo many occaſions of care, that he knew not what to doe, nor which way to direct his ſteps. All the reſt of that day he rode in the night in this vncomfortable ſort, vntill it grew to be night, neyther caring for meat nor lodging, but turning his Horſe loſe to feed, he layd himſelfe downe vnder an Oake, whoſe ſpreading branches were as a large Canopy ouer his head, clogged with ſo many diuerſities of cares that his heart was vailed with their confuſion, and his ſences ſo ouergroune with conceit, that they brought him into a dead ſleepe. In midſt whereof, he ſuddenly awoke, being called by a Virgin that appeared vnto him, who ſtanding before him ſayd, Knight, ariſe, and follow me. Montelyon marueiling what ſhe ſhould be, aroſe and followed her, ſhe leading the way ſhe thought, through many by-paths, and croſſe-wayes, hils, dales and Woods, vntill ſuch time as the Sunne aroſe, ſhe vaniſhed out of his ſight, and left him in the middeſt of a pleaſant greene Meadow, beautified with all ſorts of freſh blowne flowers, whoſe beauty delighted the eye, and ſweet ſmell affected the ſences, looking round about him, he ſaw the ſame encompaſſed with Springs, or Groues young Trees, and in the middeſt thereof, an Arbour frame of freſh blowming Roſes, made with ſuch Art, as he admired the ſame:

ſame: comming neere thereto, he eſpyed the floore ſtrowed with greene rushes, and upon them, all ſorts of flowers nipt from the ſtalkes: he ſtood a while with admiration beholding the ſame, and caſting his eye aſide, he eſpyed a Table with theſe Verſes written thereon.

What ere thou be that ſhalt behold this Writ,
Abſtaine from entring to this ſacred place,
A company of comely Nymphes heere ſit,
That rule the Heſperian Oracle of Grace:
Be not too bold, leſt thou repent too late,
Thy raſh attempt, and hard divining Fate.

Which when he had read, he ſtood in a deepe ſtudy, arguing their ambiguity, when ſuddenly he heard the ſound of moſt ſweet Muſicke drawing neare him, turning his eyes that way, he eſpyed a troupe of Damzels, attyred in moſt rich Ornaments, with Garlands of Roſes, mixt with diuers coloured flowers upon their heads, ſome of them playing upon Inſtruments, others bearing in theyr hands a Wande, and at their backe, a ſheafe of Arrowes. Amongſt them there was three taller, more beautifull, and richly adorned then the reſt, wearing Crownes of Palme: amongſt them he eſpyed the Damzell that brought him thither, which made him with more boldneſſe ſtay their comming, they paſſed by him continuing their Melody, untill they came within their Pauilion, then two of them came forth, ſalating him with moſt courteous and gentle behauiour, leading him to the Pauilion, untill he came neare to the place where they were all ſeated, and the three principalleſt in the midſt, Montelyon diſarming his head, kneeling upon his Knee, did them reuerence, when preſently he heard a voice vttering of theſe words.

Moſt noble Knight, the Nymphes of the Heſperian Oracle, pitying thy cares and troubles, haue brought thee hither to comfort thee with our aſſiſtance: vnto which place neuer any man was yet admitted: therefore reueale not to any what thou haſt ſeene: with thy Sword maintaine their honour, and name thy ſelfe, Knight of the Oracle. Thy parentage is Noble, thy father not knowing he

hath

hath a Sonne, and your mother not thinking to see either Father or Sonne, yet all of you shall most happily meete: thy Fortune shall be good, thy misfortune great, that which thou lovest best, shall trouble thee most: What thou thinkest thy selfe nearest, thou shalt be farthest off: thy professed Friends, thy greatest foes. Thou wert begotten in Persia, borne in Arabia, and brought up in Assiria. Be constant in Love, true to thy Friends, patient in misery, and lowly in prosperity. Farewell, and be both happy and unfortunate.

The Voyce ceasing, the Nymphes came round about him, one buckling his Sword, another unlacing his Helme, and a third unbuckling his Armour: Others taking of his Gantlets, and every one busied to disarme him. Which done, one of the chiefest of them presented him with a most rich & curious ingramen Armour, wrought of the best and purest Lydian-steele, enamelled all over with greene, richly beset with Dyamonds, Saphyrs, Jaspires, and Rubyes, the like whereof, for Strength and Richnesse, never Knight pusest: Which when they had Armed him withall, the second gave him a Shield, agreeable thereto in Richnesse, with this deuise thereon: A Knight kneeling incompassed with Nymphs, Crowning him with a wreath of Roses. And underneath, these Words written in Gold: The Knight of the Oracle; The third presented him with a most rich Sword, which she gyrded to his side. Another, a paire of Gantlets: another a Plume: another a Speare: another a paire of Spurres, and every one something to expresse their kindnesse. When he was adorned with this rich furniture, which made him most beautifull to beholde, every one of them gave him a courteous Farewell, and departed againe the same way they came from the Grove, with their Musicke: the Damzell that brought him thither, came to him, uttering these words: Knight, the Ladyes of this Oracle, pitying the hard Aduentures you are to undertake, have bestowed these Armes upon you, which shall oftentimes preserue your life: and have honoured you so much, as to choose you for their Knight. They have likewise appointed me to bring you backe to the place where I found you: Therefore let us depart, my selfe will give you a Steed, whose equall for goodnesse cannot be had. Which when she had said, she led the way, and he followed on, untill they came to a Castle, into which the Damzell entred, willing him to

ſtay till ſhée returned, leading in her hand a Steed, blacke of colour, but of ſuch goodly proportion, that his eyes had neuer beheld the like before: when he was mounted, the Damzell ſayd vnto him, Knight of the Oracle, farewell, proſper, and be fortunate, which ſhe had no ſooner ſpoken, but ſtraight ſhée vaniſhed from his ſight before hée could haue reſpite to yeild her thanks for her courteſie. Being parted from her, he entred into theſe meditations, which ſhortned the way as he rode.

How farre am I bleſt beyond my deſert, hauing receyued ſuch fauour and gifts of Nymphes, as yet neuer any man did, inſomuch that they haue elected me to the high honour of being their Knight: and yet for all this, I feele my heart ſo much troubled, that nothing can rid me from diſquiet, onely for the abſence and loſſe of Philotheta, whom I had thought to haue found amongſt thoſe ſacred Nymphes but was fruſtrated, which aſſureth me, my trauels in ſeeking her will be tedious, yet I ſhall endure them, although they laſt to the end of my life. I haue loſt the noble King Perſicles, who by this time accuſeth me of diſcourteſie for not finding him out: but how can I doe that when I haue loſt my ſelfe and Philotheta: and in her my eſſence, being, and ſubſtance: which of theſe is deareſt vnto me, I know not: my ſelfe I loue by nature, him for his honour, and her by affection. Which then ſhould I firſt goe in ſearch of, ſince they are both ſo deare vnto me, as I thinke my ſelfe depriued of comfort, miſſing either of them: my eſtate is alſo ſo vncertaine, and the place where to finde them ſo doubtfull, that I cannot aſſure my ſelfe of confidence in either, but muſt take my fortune as it falleth, and arme my ſelfe with patience to endure the moſt hardeſt tryall of extreames: the intrioacie of his hopeleſſe meditations, would haue lengthened his ſpéech, but caſting off effeminate lamentation, he quickned his ſences with reuiued comfort, though his trauels would be long, yet his reward (if he might finde his loue) would a thouſand times countermaile them. Then hée beganne to ſtudy which way to trauell, being as ignorant of the place that Philotheta was, as he was vnacquainted in thoſe walkes: riding along in theſe and ſuch like ſolitarie dumpes, he at length lighted in a plaine faire beaten path, in the furrowes of whoſe duſt, he might perceiue the footing

of

of horſes that had newly gone that way, which put him in ſome comfort that it would not be long before he ſhould finde ſome company: He had not rode about an houre, but the way into which he had entred, aſcended a high mountaine, whoſe lofty top diſcouered to his ſight the faire turrets of the Enchanted Tower, which gliſtered as if they had beene framed of maſſie gold, which drew him into an admiration: but viewing well the ſcittuation thereof, he diſcerned the valleyes round about overſpred with tents, as if the ſame had beene encompaſſed with a hoſt of enemies. Thither he intended to trauell, forſaking the gallant proſpect, to be acquainted with the cauſe of that aſſembly, making the more haſte, for that it grew towards night: but ere hee could attaine thither, it grewe to bee darke: therefore for that night, hee tooke vp his lodging vnder the couert of a tuske of trees, pleaſantly ſeated in the middeſt of a greene Meadow.

CHAP. XXVI,

Of the conference betweene *Conſtantia* and *Philotheta* in *Pembraſus* Caſtle.

The Hiſtorie hath long diſcontinued to ſpeake of the Lady Conſtantia that remained enchanted, and of Helyon, that likewiſe lay theyr inthralled in great miſery, rightly rewarded for his treacherous dealing. Her eyes ſhedding continuall teares for the abſcence of Perſicles, on whom ſhe continually meditated, reſolving that nothing but death ſhould aboliſh his remembrance, that had not Ila comforted her with promiſes of her releaſe, the extremity of her ſorrow had ſome ended her life: withall thinking that Perſicles and her young ſonne might both be in ſafety, and yet ſhee by no meanes could heare thereof: which alſo added ſome comfort to her heauie heart. Oftentimes ſhe would intreat her to behold the valiant aduentures of noble Knights, that hazarded their owne Perſons in the aduenture for to attayne her loue, and in priuate tryalls amongſt themſelues, with whom they were deeply in loue, onely with the ſight of her Picture, but ſhe ſtill refuſed it, accounting it no

pleaſure to her to ſee their miſfortune, that ſpent their labour in vain, for in the continuance of ſo many yeares as ſhe had beene there incloſed, the fame of her beauty was ſpred into moſt parts of thoſe countryes and many thouſand Knights had beene there to trie theyr Fortunes, but all failed: the recitall whereof would be ouer tedious, but many of them lay theyr impriſoned by the Enchantreſſe, who now being in diſpaire of her owne ſafety, ſought to bring all to miſery, as well as her ſelfe: At ſuch time as Philotheta was carried from Montelyon in the Hermits Cell, Conſtantia remained in ſuch extremity of ſorrow, that had not Ila wrought that deuice to bring Philotheta thither to accompany her, it had beene impoſſible her ſences could haue ouergrowne the extremity of the paſſion torměted her: but ſitting alone in a darke corner, beſt fitting her ſad diſpoſition, ſhe vttered ſuch lamentations as would haue turned the flinteſt heart of a moſt cruell Tyrant to remorſe: but ſuddenly eſpying Ila entred, and with her ſo beautifull a Damzell, with cheekes bedewed with chriſtall teares, that in aboundance trickled down her face: with that obiect ſhe left her owne laments to pitty hers, & ſaying them draw nigh to her, ſhe aroſe after a ſad ſort ſaluting them ſad approach. Ila without ſpeaking a word, left them together. Though they were both women, yet both admiring each others beauty, eyther thinking the other to excell all, and yet had they beheld their own perfections, they might inwardly haue conceyued as well of themſelues, as they did of the outward obiect.

Conſtantia being more familiar with ſorrow then Philotheta was, firſt broke ſilence, ſaying Lady, I perceyue by your teares that conſtraint, not your conſent, hath brought you to this place, beautifull to the eye, but filld with diſcontents, which long experience hath taught me: therefore if you want a companion in care, accept of my company: but if you ſeeke for comfort abandon me, for my cheefeſt ſolace is ſorrow, and my very thoughts & meditations of nothing but diſcontent. I haue not (ſaid Philotheta) beene long ſubiect to this miſfortune: but being now plunged therein, I knew not how to releaſe my ſelfe, or how to ſhun the ſame: neyther knowing who is cauſe thereof, where I am, or when I ſhall be releaſed, that my ſorrowes are ſuch as may well entertaine a ſorrowfull companion, accepting your proffered kindneſſe, with hearty thanks.

Lady

Lady (ſaid Conſtantia) as you vouchſafe me your company, ſo let me know what miſfortune hath brought you hither, which will ſhorten ſome of the tedious time that we are like to ouerpaſſe in this place: which done, you ſhall know to whom you haue imparted your minde, the recitall whereof will be tedious. Philotheta ſitting downe by her, vttered theſe ſpeeches. My name is Philotheta, daughter in law to Amphiador: Vpon a day as I was walking in my Fathers garden, vpon what pretence I know not, three Gyants ſurpriſed me, and by force carried me thence, none to my knowledge ſeeing their cruelty: when they had trauelled with me vntill it waxed late, a Knight armed all in white, gallantly mounted, came to my reſcue, encountercombate with the Gients, his valiant heart not refuſing to cope with all three of them. But one of them thinking himſelfe too ſtrong for him, ſtayed to combate him, the other two with haſte carrying me away, but in ſhort ſpace one of them ran backe to reſcue his fellow whom the knight had ſlayne, himſelfe likewiſe returning with loſſe of one of his armes, haling me forwards with violent force, vntill they came into the midſt of a wood, where they meant to ſtay that night. This Knight directed by good fortune, alighted on the place where they lay, and by his valour and policie ſlew them both, yet ſo ſore hurt himſelfe, that he lay breathleſſe vpon the earth, which afflicted my heart with ſorrow, fearing his death, that I could not comfort him in ought by my teares and laments, accounting it more misfortune for me to be the cauſe of ſo worthy a Knights death, then if I my ſelfe had been ſtill priſoner to thoſe monſters: the heauens fauouring my ſorrowes & his miſhaps, directed an old Hermit to the place, who with the iuyce of certaine hearbs recouered him, & with my weake aſſiſtance brought him to his Cell, within ſhort ſpace curing him. In which time, I noted euery part of his perfections, and found them ſuch as I want ſkill to decipher comparing thereto his behauiour, which bred a perſwaſion in me, that as he was valiant, ſo he was vertuous and as he excelled all that euer I beheld in perſon, ſo he did in courteſie. Much conference paſt betwixt vs, which I omit: The ſubiect whereof was Loue, which he auerred to be as conſtant in him, though new begun, as it was in any by long continuance.

Amongſt the reſt of his ſpeeches, he told me, that he knew not his

Parents, his name was Montelyon: the cauſe of his trauell was in ſearch of a Lady named Conſtantia, betrothed Wife to Perſicles King of Aſſiria, who parted from him that day he reſcued me in Arabia. Conſtantia hearing ſuch good newes of the ſafety of Perſicles, could not withhold her ſelfe from bewraying what ſhee was: but taking Philothea by the hand ſaid, deare Lady, this newes addeth much comfort to my diſpayring heart, I am that vnfortunate Conſtantia, that till this time haue diſpayred of euer ſeeing that noble King againe, accounting my ſelfe ſo much bound to you, for being the happy reporter of this welcome newes, that I proteſt my ſelfe your euerlaſting Friend, aſſuring you, that if that worthy Knight that reſcued you be companion to Perſicles hee is indued with all heroicke vertues: but I pray you tell me out the reſt. The worthy Knights ſpeeches (ſaid ſhee) wrought ſo effectually with me, that I could haue beene contented to haue lined there with him for euer. In the end the Hermit brought in newes that Amphiador was hard by in my ſearch, at which newes I was very glad, yet alſo diſpleaſed, with knowing his rude behauiour would not ſuffer him to vſe the ſtrange knight kindly. Whilſt I was in this thought, three knights in greene armour entred the Cell, two of them without ſpeaking a word, by force carrying me forth, whileſt the third ſtayed the Knight in combate, who haſtily followed to my reſcue: but of a ſudden, before I could bethinke me what they ſhould be, I was within this garden, where I met her that brought me vnto you, who willed mee to feare nothing, for here I ſhould remaine in ſafety. With that ſuch a flood of teares guſhed from her eyes, that they ſtopt the paſſage of her ſpeach, turning the ſame into ſilence. Lady (ſaid Conſtantia) to adde more care to my heart, would ouerwhelm it with griefe, therefore I will omit the relation of my tragicke hiſtorie till another time, neither fearing nor feeling care, now I heare of my Lords ſafety, who will ſet me at liberty from the thraldome I haue here endured almoſt theſe twenty yeares. Ila comming to them brake of their conference, After ſupper conuaying them to a Chamber, where they both lay, continuing ſome dayes in much conference of their eſtate, which for breuity ſake is omitted.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

How *Montelyon Knight of the Oracle* arriued at the enchanted Tower, called *Pembraſus Pallace*. And of the controuerſie that fell betweene him and the Knights that were come to try the aduenture.

The Knight of the Oracle, as it is beforeſaid, hauing lodged all night in the wood, early the next morning before golden Phebus had beautified the earth with his brightneſſe, mounted his ſteed with an earneſt deſire to know whoſe tents thoſe were, and what Tower it was they had encompaſſed, hee had not rode halfe an houre, but he approached neere vnto them, paſſing amongſt them without ſtay, becauſe he met none to conferre withall, he drew towards the entrance of the bridge, where Conſtantiaes Picture hung, which when he had well viewed, he iudged by the outward ſhew thereof, what perfections were adherent to the Lady, that was owner thereof, thereby calling to remembrance his Philothetas perfections, which in his conceit farre ſurpaſſed that, but yet the ſpell that Ila had caſt thereon, wrought ſo with him, that had not the vertue of his Armour and other giftes the Nymphes had beſtowed on him, which had power againſt all Enchantments preuayled, hee had ſurely doted thereon: when he had read the verſes, an earneſt deſire poſſeſt his heart to redeeme that Lady, that neither regarding danger nor omitting opportunity, he tooke the horne and winded the ſame, the ſound thereof made many Knights ſtart from forth their Tents, being but euen then vp, and newly armed: the firſt, that was mounted, and came to the Bridge: was a noble Knight of Parthia, named Menon, who calling to the Knight of the Oracle, ſayd, Knight enter no farther before thou know whom thou haſt offended by thy bold intruſion. He hearing his words turned his ſteed ſaying, If I haue offended any it is more then I know, but yet I am reſolued to try the aduenture who ſo euer ſayes no. Menon ſayd thy ſtrangeneſſe doth priuiledge thee, becauſe thou knowеſt not what is concluded amongſt the Knights that are here aſſembled. Sir ſaid he, whatſoeuer agreeth with the Law of armes I yeld vnto, and whatſoeuer courteſie bindeth me to, I will performe: therfore

let

let me know what it is I muſt performe before I paſſe further: By this time he was incompaſſed with Armed Knights: and one of them named Linſeus, of Arabia, that thought himſelfe too good for all, and banquiſhed many that had Combated with him, ſaid. Before thou paſſe further, thou muſt combat vs: For the meaneſt of many that are here aſſembled, thinketh himſelfe able to performe as much as thée. The Knight of the Oracle wondring at their rudeneſſe, and moued with his diſcourteous words, ſaid: I am not to be controlled by any, but ſtand free in mine owne choyſe, to doe what I thinke good: therefore if thou or any here be offended with that I haue ſaid or done, Challenge me. And I doe challenge thée ſaid Linſeus, and I, ſaid Menon: and after them many other, every one deſirous to deale with him firſt. The Prince of Parthia, (named Neſſus) ſtept forth and ſaid. Fellow Knights, wée being all profeſſors of Armes, and euery one a Partner in this Quarrell, let vs caſt Lots, and to his ſhare that the Lot, firſt falleth, let him beginne, and the reſt follow: With that they all agréed. The Knight of the Oracle thought hée ſhould not be Idle, reioycing that he had ſo good occaſion to make tryall of his Valour. The lot fell to Arnon of Perſia to beginne. The place, a goodly Plaine, in the full view of the Tower: and the time, was within an houre. This being agréed vpon, the Knight of the Oracle in the meane time rode about the Tower, to behold the beauty and ſcituation thereof, which hée admired, and caſting his Eye vp, he beheld on the Battlement a farre off, three Ladyes walking together, whom he could ſcarcely diſcerne: much leſſe if he had béene acquainted with them, know. Theſe Ladies were Conſtantia, Philotheta, and Ila, that came to beholde the Lyſts & turneys that were daily acted betweene many and diuers Knights before the Tower. Conſtantia, hearing of Perſicles ſafetie, and of his being in that Countrey, hoping thereby in time to be releaſed, deſired to beholde the Combatants, which before ſhe had alwayes refuſed to doe. The Knight of the Oracle little thinking Philotheta had béene one of the three, after he had a while ſtood to beholde them, returned to the appointed place of Combate, where Arnon was then but newly entred with great pride, and the ſound of Trumpets, and a number of followers. Whom the Knight of the Oracle, (notwithſtanding all his brauerie,) ouerthrew at the firſt En-

Encounter, to Arnons amazement, and his owne glory. That done, the next that encountred him, was Linseus, who held out two courses, but at the third, both he and his steed lay on the earth. The Knights that beheld this, commended his Valour, yet envyed his Fortune. After that he encountred three Knights of Ægypt. Then came Nessus Prince of Parthia, thinking to recover that his Precedents had lost, but his Fortune proved so bad that he lost both his Stirrops, and had he not hung on the Saddle-bowe, he had layne on the ground. The Day by this time drew to an end, which caused them to remit their further tryall till the next Morning. Constantia and Philotheta, beholding the valour of this one Knight, according to her desire, deemed it was Perficles, the other Montelyon: desiring Ila, to send a Messenger to know his Name: Who returning, told them he was called the Knight of the Oracle. Then it is not Perficles (sayd Constantia.) No, nor Montelyon, sayd Philotheta. Their hearts now fainting with care, that before were reuived with Hope. The Knight of the Oracle that night lodged with a Knight of Persia, named Thymus, in his Tent, who in courteous sort intreated him thereto. Early the next Morning, he againe entred the Field, ready for him that should next Encounter him, who came gallantly mounted, having likewise travelled many Miles to trye his Fortune in the Aduenture: but before he came to fit himselfe therein, he received so great a Discharge, by Encountring the Knight of the Oracle, that in a desperate mood, and ashamed of his foyle, he departed. The Knight of the Oracle being endued with an extraordinary Wit, as receiuing the Essence thereof from two such goodly Princes as he was sprung of, began in his thoughts to condemne the foolnesse of those Knights, that comming to make tryall of the Aduenture, spent their time in priuate Quarrels, still omitting that which principally they had sought, his Minde being so troubled with the losse of Philotheta and Perficles, desired not to linger there, but to hasten in their search. Therefore parting towards the Knights, who were assembled on a heape, studying which way to worke his disgrace, he sayd to them. Worthy Knights, my comming to this place, was not to try my Fortune against you, but in the Aduenture, and your priuate Enuy hath hitherto hindred me, not regarding into what priuate Quarrels you enter, and cruelly

troubling me, that haue not offended you: Therefore becauſe buſineſſe of more importance then to anſwer your Spleene, biddeth my departure, I wiſh you, not fearing my ability to anſwer you, to remit this priuate Contention vntill another time: and if any of you rather enuiouſly condemne me, or repine at my good Fortune, I will be ready to anſwer your ſeuerall Quarrels in Perſia, at the time that is appointed for the meeting of the Kings of Aſſyria, and Armenia: for the cauſe of your approach, being to releaſe this Ladyes impriſonment, weaken not your force in priuate contention: for in the Tryall thereof, you ſhall finde occaſion enough to exerciſe your Armes.

Hearing his words they conſented thereunto, yet contending who ſhould firſt try the Aduenture. In the end they agreed to caſt Lots: in which the laſt fell to the Knight of the Oracle: euery one hauing a Dayes reſpit for the finiſhing thereof. Thus did they make tryall of themſelues: Some with ſuch labour attaining the Bridge, but then feazed by vertue of the Enchantment to yéeld, and ſo were impriſoned in moſt Lamentable wiſe, by the Enuy of Ila, who deſired the Enchantment might neuer end, but that ſhe might liue there for euer. Others with feare ran away. Many dayes it was before it came to the Knight of the Oracles turne: In the end, all being either fled or impriſoned, he alone was left to try his Fortune, neyther hauing Friend to ſuccour him, Foe to Enuy him, nor any to behold him: for the Enchantreſſe had made ſuch deſolation among the Knights, by caſting fires amongſt them, that all the Seruants to thoſe Knights, fled as amazed, reporting from place to place their Maſters miſery, and the cauſe of their owne terror. Notwithſtanding, nothing could affright or diſcourage the valiant heart of the Knight of the Oracle, but he reſted as reſolute to goe forwards, as if there had bin no danger incident to the attempt.

Conſtantia ſeeing how many Knights were at that inſtant impriſoned, all their Tents deſtroyed, and no man as ſhe thought left, began to diſcomfort her ſelfe, vtterly deſpayring of releaſment, deſiring Ila to let her view the Knights that were impriſoned, fearing that Perficles was amongſt them: but her requeſts were in vaine, for Ila fretted with extreame feare of the end of her Enchantment, in a mad rage flung from them, ſtudying which way to lengthen

the

the date thereof, which tormented poore Conſtantiaes heart, that had bæn ſo long in miſery, and terrified kind Philothetaes minde with extreame feare of further calamity. Both ſhe and Conſtantia all that Night bewailing their miſery.

Chap. XXVIII.

How the *Knight of the Oracle* finiſhed tht Enchantment. And how *Ila* departed with *Philotheta*.

Early the in Morning, the Knight of the Oracle, ſurueying the ſituation of the Bridge, which way he might eyther aduantage himſelfe, or diſaduantage his Foe, winded his Horne, wherewith there was ſuch an exceeding Earthquake within the tower, that the foundation thereof ſhooke as if it would haue ouerturned her ſtately Turrets. At which firſt ſound of the horne, one of the Gyants came forth without ſpeaking, ſtriking at him, but he defended himſelfe a great while on Horſebacke, vntill the Gyant preſſed ſo hard vpon him, that he was driuen to withdraw him to light. Which when he had done, he againe aſſayled him, giuing him many a deepe wound, and receiuing many a ſore bruiſe, that had not his good Armor preſerued him, it had brought him in great danger: but in the end he preuayled ſo much by the death of the firſt Gyant, that he attayned the firſt and ſecond Fortification of the Bridge. And at the third he was ſo violently ſet vpon by the other Giant, that he was only compelled to ward his blowes, in the end likewiſe eſpying ſuch aduantage that he ran his Sword quite through his body. By which means, he entred the firſt large Court, where he beheld the Armors of ſuch Knights as had fayled in their ſundry attempts, hanging about the Wals, hearing their hollow voyces, which by impriſonment had endured much affliction. Ila now knowing that the date of her glory in that place ſhould end, in furious ſort came running to the place where Conſtantia and Philotheta were, taking Philotheta with violence from out the Arbour, and by force of her Enchantment, compelling her to follow her, vntill ſhe came to the Court where the Knight of the Oracle was, he ſuddenly beholding Philotheta, at the firſt ſight knew her: and fearing them ſo paſſe by him, towards the Entrance, he ſtept after them to ſpeake to her, when preſently there ruſht vpon him a number of armed men that lyed

vpon him with ſuch ſwiftneſſe, that they had no power to ſtyre from the place where he ſtood. They ſuddenly vaniſhed, and he ſtood ſo amazed with the ſight, and perplexed with ſuch doubt, that he could not tell what to doe: Sometimes thinking to follow Philotheta: then perſwading himſelfe it was but an illuſion: and thinking to caſt off that doubt, and go forwards, his minde was poſſeſt with ſuch deſire to ſee her againe, that he ſtood as a man without ſence. When ſuddenly ſuch a Myſt darkened all the place, that he could ſcarcely ſee his hands, which continued by the ſpace of halfe an houre. Whileſt he remained in ſuch thoughts, ſometimes of perſwaſion it was Philotheta, which troubled his very heart to thinke what ſhould be become of her, that he ſeemed to haue loſt his ſences by the ſight of her: remaining in many meditations, the Myſt vaniſhed, and the Sun with exceeding ſplendor, diſcloſed the beauty of Penthraſus Pallace. When he ſaw no further expectation of danger approaching, he entred further, towards the three Gates of Braſſe, beholding the curious workes thereof, through which he entred into the Court, which drew his minde into much admiration thereof. Entring the Hall, he beheld the two Lyons (which kept the Paſſage) that with a faire proſpect diſcouered the beauty of the Garden. The Lyons no ſooner eſpyed him, but they preſently made ſuch a noyſe with their Roring, that all the Pallace rung thereof. And Conſtantia hearing the ſame, cryed out, as exceedingly affrighted. The Knight of the Oracle attempted to paſſe by them, expecting no other but cruell reſiſtance: yet contrary to his thoughts, they laid themſelues downe at his feet (as it were) reuerencing him: Which when he beheld, of his owne inclination, he loſed both their Chaines, and they ran forth of the Pallace with exceeding ſwiftneſſe, which amazed him to behold.

Paſſing through the Hall, he entred the Garden, looking round about, to behold the beauty thereof, when ſuddenly he began to wonder, that he had beheld neuer a liuing creature ſince he entred, which drawe him into an exceeding Admiration, maruelling that he could not behold the Lady of whoſe Picture he had beheld at the entrance, ſo that finding himſelfe ouer-wearyed with labour, purpoſing to reſt his Body, he returned into the Hall, and there ſeated himſelfe in a moſt rich and coſtly Chayre. Conſtantia being in the Arbour, beheld when he entred the Garden, and when he went backe, maruelling what he ſhould be, and little thinking the Enchantment was

ended

ended, not daring her ſelfe to goe forth of the Arbour, her heart was ſo poſſeſt with amazement, deſired one of the Damzels, if ſhe found her, to goe ſee what he was, and learne the cauſe of that vproare, which they had heard in the Pallace. One of the Damzels being more hardy then the other, told her, how for the Loue ſhe bare her, ſhe would aduenture, though it coſt her her life. Paſſing on towards the Pallace, with ſuch haſty ſteps, as if ſomething had purſued her, and yet going forwards. As if ſhe will had been before her, that ſhe could nyther tell whether, wherefore, nor why ſhe went: vntill of a ſudden ſhe mounted the paſſage into the Hall, and was right before the Knight of the Oracle: Whom when ſhe ſaw, ſhe ſtood looking vpon him, trembling as if ſhe had bin diſtraught. The Knight of the Oracle, riſing from his ſeate, ſayd: Damzell, feare not, I will defend you from danger, here is none intendeth you harme. The Damzell hearing his voyce, was reuiued, ſaying: Sir Knight, I marueil what ſtrange accident hath brought you hither, where no Knight hath bin theſe many yeares? Lady (ſayd he) Fortune and my good Deſtinies, that haue bin imployed to ſet you at Liberty. Sir (ſayd ſhe) it is not I, but my Miſtris you meane, by whoſe commaund I haue aduentured to ſee what was happened: to whom if you will vouchſafe to goe, I will conduct you. He could remember, it was not her Picture he had beheld, therefore he bluſht to be ſo deceiued, but told her, his comming was to doe her Lady ſeruice. With that they entred the Garden. Conſtantia ſoone eſpying them, and ſeeing the Knight come in ſuch peaceable ſort with the Damzell, went forth to meet him, he likewiſe ſeeing her, ſheathed his ſword, his heart trembling at the firſt ſight of her, by a naturall inclination, bearing ſuch a Reuerend regard to her maieſticall perſon, that when he came nigh her, he did her reuerence vpon his knee, vttering theſe words.

Moſt Noble Lady, be not diſquieted with feare of reſtrained liberty, for the date of the Enchantment of this Caſtle is finiſhed. Conſtantia ſtepping to him, tooke him by the hand, deſiring him not to kneele to her, who was vnworthy, but rather had cauſe to vſe him with the like reuerence. Moſt Noble Lady (ſayd he) I haue all the Reward I expect: yet grant me one fauor (which is) to tell me your Name. Conſtantiaes hart at that word leapt within her, which cauſed an exceeding bluſh to poſſeſſe her cheekes, ſaying: Moſt Honourable Knight, I were to blame to deny you ſo ſmall a Requeſt, my

Name is Conſtantia. Then haue the Heauens (quoth he) made me fortunate with beholding you, whom my heart hath euer honoured. Conſtantia wondred what he ſhould be, aſſuring her ſelfe it was not Perſicles, for he would not haue asked her name, yet ſhe thought that ſorrow might ſo much haue altered her in the long time of her ſeparation, that on the ſudden he could not know her, that her heart was much troubled with thoſe thoughts, till he interrupted them with theſe ſpeeches. Lady, it may be you ſuppoſe me for other then I am, to rid you of which ambiguity, my name is now Knight of the Oracle, which I haue but lately beene knowne by, for before I was called Montelyon, brought vp in Perſia, but whether I was borne there, or who my Parents were, as yet I know not: the cauſe of my trauell into this Countrey, was in your ſearch, in the company of my Noble Lord Perſicles: who for your abſence liueth in continuall griefe: Therefore I beſeech you reuiue your heart from care, and put your confidence in my fidelity: for I will neuer part from you, vntill I haue brought you to his preſence. Conſtantines heart with theſe words was poſſeſt with ſuch ioy, as is not to be expreſt. And remembring what Philotheta had told her of Montelyon, ſhe ſayd: Moſt honoured Knight, I haue long before this heard of your honourable friendſhip ſhown to my deare Lord Perſicles, which maketh me without doubt reſolue my whole confidence in you, which came to my hearing by the report of a Lady whom you lately ſuccoured in this Country, named Philotheta. With that he fetch a deepe ſigh from the bottome of his heart, ſaying: Indeed I did once enioy her preſence, but whether I ſhall euer ſee her againe, or where ſhe is, I know not: Yet if I were not deluded, I did behold her departing out of this Caſtle. It may be ſo, ſayd Conſtantia, for ſhe was with me this day, and hath beene here this many dayes, but the Enchantreſſe in great haſte, and by violence tooke her from my company, carrying her I know not whether, by whoſe kind report of your vertues, I conceiue ſuch comfort in their aſſurance, that I entreat your promiſe of aſſiſtance, & with that ſhall my heart reſt as voyd of feare, as if I were in the Court of the King my Father in Perſia.

My heart, ſaid ſhe, reioyceth to heare your kind ſpeeches, vowing to imploy my life, and all my being to be at your command. Then they departed into the Pallace, with purpoſe not to tarry there, but inſtantly to leaue the ſame: but comming into the outer Court, he remem-

remembred, that he had heard the voyces of men that lay in miſery his heart willing to ſuccour them: deſiring her not to be offended, if he had made ſome ſtay to releaſe them out of Bondage, which he might ſome doe, when there was none to reſiſt them. She willingly conſented, and he in little ſearch found the Keyes that opened the Entrance into the Priſon, leaving Conſtantia in place of ſecurity, for that he would not trouble her ſences with the ſmell of the Priſon: being entred he found a great number there incloſed, many of them in ſuch poore and diſtreſſed eſtate, that his heart lamented to behold, ſo faſt as he could pulling off their fetters: at laſt he beheld Helyon, though to him vnknowne, whoſe fleſh ſeemed to be incorporate with the Earth whereon he lay, from whence he could not riſe, vntill he was helpen: who now knew the Enchantment to be finiſhed: repenting himſelfe of the folly he had committed: when, he had ſet them at liberty, and they were come out into the cleare light, they with one aſſent yeelded him thanks, vowing themſelues his perpetuall bounden friends. Conſtantia likewiſe ſeeing them wept with griefe, that ſo many ſhould be endangered to ſet her at liberty. They all proffered their ſeruice vnto her, but ſhee deſiring not to be knowne of any, in courteous ſort refuſed the ſame, repoſing her whole confidence in the Knight of the Oracle, who preſently according to her deſire, left the Pallace, and without the Gate found his owne Steed graſing, in company of others that had loſt their Riders: amongſt them he tooke theſe, on which he mounted Conſtantia and her two Damzels, haſting to trauell ſo farre, as the dayes length would permit from the Pallace, Lodging that Night in a Village ſome fiue Miles diſtant from the ſame. The Knights that were releaſed, ſeeing them departed, likewiſe betooke themſelues to trauell, except Helyon, who was ſo feeble, that he could not trauell.

CHAP. XXIX.

How the *Knight of the Oracle* departed with *Conſtantia*. How they arrived at *Delatus* Caſtle: and how ſhe knew him to bee her Sonne.

COnſtantia found ſuch courteous behauiour, and kind aſſiſtance, in the Knight, that ſhe remained in great quiet, but noting his com-

countenance, ſhe perceiued the ſame to be darkened with ſome miſty Clouds of diſcontent, which ſhe ſuppoſed to be for the loſſe of Phyllocheta, but yet ſhe concealed her opinion from him: wherein ſhe iumpt right on his infirmity, for his heart was pincht with ſuch cares for her loſſe and ſafety, that it could endure no quiet. But in the Morning when they ſhould depart, they began to conſider which way they ſhould trauell, or whether they ſhould ſtay to heare of Perſicles there, or goe directly into Aſſyria. Amongſt many doubts, they agreed to trauell directly into Aſſyria, where he told Conſtantia they ſhould aſſuredly finde him, for that the time of the appointed meeting of him and the King of Armenia drew nigh: after many dayes trauell they came to the place where he remembred he firſt ſaw Phillocheta, and parted from Perſicles, which he reuealed not to Conſtantia, as vnwilling to make her priuy to his loue: yet he purpoſed in his iourney to viſite Amphiador, hoping to finde her there, and comming to the Caſtle, he was welcommed thither by Delatus, that was againe reſtored to his Dukedome. Sir, ſayd the Knight of the Oracle, I had thought this had beene Amphiadors Caſtle. Amphiador did poſſeſſe it, but indeed the right was mine, and though I haue no acquaintance with you, yet I beſeech you accept ſuch entertainment as it yeeldeth, and if not longer yet for this night, that I may know whom I haue lodged, and you haue ſome knowledge of my affection vnto. They both noting with what hearty affection he ſpake, being weary with trauell, alighted to reſt themſelues, being kindly welcommed by him and Aliala. After Supper, Delatus began theſe ſpeeches.

Worthy Knight, ſhould I rehearſe the whole circumſtance of my misfortune, and Amphiadors wickedneſſe, I ſhould both trouble you with the tediouſneſſe, and renue my owne ſorrowes: onely this, he wrought meanes to depriue me of this Dukedome, and cauſed Penthraſus to enchant me in the Deſart, with purpoſe I ſhould neuer returne: yet he fauouring me, bound me there no longer then Conſtantia ſhould remaine Inchanted in the Tower, built by Helyon Prince of Arabia, reuealing vnto mee many ſecrets that I will hereafter diſcouer. Not many dayes ſince, I found my ſelfe freed from this bondage, whereby he knew that the Enchantment was finiſhed. The ſame day the Enchantreſſe Ha fauouring Amphiador, ſeeing the date of her power grew

to

to an end, came to this Castle, and with her brought Philotheta not his, but my Daughter, declaring to him my release, with whom he is fled, carrying Philotheta with them, but whether I know not: Which I feare me will turne to her great sorrow, for his minde is so apt to cruelty and mischiefe, that he careth not to act any villanie to satisfie his owne minde. I rehearse this vnto you, though I know it concernes you not: yet to let you vnderstand that by finishing the Enchauntment I was released: Which Ila knowing, gaue him knowledge of, and that is the cause of his flight: and also I intreat you to graunt me one fauour: That is, to let me know whether your Name be not Constantia? for my minde giueth me you are the same. I am (said she) that most vnfortunate creature, and by this Knights noble Valour was I set at liberty, to whom I am most infinitely bound. My heart said Delatus reioyceth, that I euer had cause to doe you any courtesie, and that it was my good fortune to see you in this place, hauing long wished for your Releasement: not onely for mine owne good, but for that Noble King Perficles sake, who was with me in the Desert where I liued intyrailed since his comming into Arabia, who with earnest resolution determined to spend the date of his life in your search: From which I dissuaded him; and by my directions he returned into Assyria: for the sequell of your Releasement was reuealed vnto me by Penthrasus himselfe: Which none could atchieue but your owne Sonne, which is this Noble Knight. May (saye he) doubt not of this, for what he reuealed, and I haue published is true, though it reseth not in my knowledge to dilate the circumstance thereof. They both wondred at his speeches, and the Knight of the Oracle said; Can I be more fortunate, or heare better Newes, or receiue any comfort that can comfort my heart more then this? O Heauens graunt that my ioyfull hope may not be frustrated, but that I may be assured I am discended of such Noble Parents: Which may be true, for Cothanes oft times told me that he found me vpon the top of a Mountaine, lying in swadling cleathes, not farre from the body of a Woman, torne and dismembred by Wilde-beasts, and many Iewels about me: One of which I haue euer since worne about my Necke: When Constantia saw it, she knew the same embracing him in her armes, and kissing him, while he with humble behauiour did him reuerence. I should be ouer-tedious to recyle their ioyes, and how

much Delatus and Alſala made of them, who would not ſo leaue them, but promiſed to Trauell with them into Aſſyria, where they were aſſured to meete Perſicles: but in ſuch ſort that none might know them, for that yet Conſtantia feared her Fathers diſpleaſure. They ſtayed there but that Night, and earely the next Morning betooke themſelues to trauell. Notwithſtanding this ioy, the Knight of the Oracle left ſome ſparkes of diſcontent which troubled all his ſences, and turned his quiet into diſquiet, which was with remembrance of Philocheta, whoſe miſhap pincht him to the very heart: who likewiſe was not free from the like diſquiet, fearing neuer to ſee him againe, little thinking his Name had beene changed, and as little thinking it was hee that ended the Enchauntment: not onely troubled with this Diſpaire, but alſo vexed with liues dealing, who hauing brought her to Amphiador, fled, and was neuer ſeene of them againe. Amphiador being alone with Philotheta, thought it not good for him to diſcouer himſelfe, leaſt he thereby ſhould hazard his life: but diſguiſing himſelfe and Philotheta, he left Arabia, and trauelled into Perſia, thinking to liue there vntill his death vndeſerued. And finding out an Habitation fit for that purpoſe, he tolde Philotheta what he intended, perſwading her to abide with him. This troubled her very heart, fearing ſome greater miſchiefe would follow. Which likewiſe according to her miſdoubt, fell out: For now that hee ſaw no meanes to recouer his Dignitie, nor attaine other Felicity, then to liue in obſcurity, his minde being likewiſe much addicted to Licencious deſire, began to dote on Philotheraes beauty, which burſt out into a flame, and he reuealed the ſame in this ſort.

Philotheta (ſayd he) if you knew what I would ſay, or if you could conceiue my meaning without words, I would refraine to ſpeake: but ſince there is no hope for me to liue, without I attaine that I deſire, I will vtter to you the depth of my good Will, and the thing that I deſire ſo much you ſhould know, which is, that I loue you: this I hope cannot be grieuous vnto you: Neither will you I truſt denie to loue me, conſidering how tenderly I haue alwayes regarded you. Should I not (ſaid ſhe, Loue you) I were to be accounted very ingratefull, and vnworthie to haue found you ſo kinde; which bindeth me to yeild you thanks. Then ſaid hee, Let me enioy that Loue, for your Beauty hath pierced my heart, and nothing but the ſweete thereof, can eaſe my torment: Here we may liue together,

voyd

void of disquyet, enioying each others loue with content, which exceedeth the pleasure that more dignified honour yeeldeth. Philotheta at the first knew his meaning, replying with mildnesse, but her heart so much disdained to yeeld to that he desired, that she could not containe her selfe, but gaue him this bitter answere. Amphiador, Doest thou thinke thy wickednesse can ouermaster my vertue? or doest thou thinke I can like to heare thy odious speech, that bewraieth the inward rancour of thy heart? or hast thou beheld such lowlines in me, that should animate thee to this dishonourable attempt? or canst thou but conceyue an opinion that I will yeeld to thy wicked lust, which is the fruit of thy ill deuising heart? No, know that I so much abhorre thee, that I shall account the worse of my selfe to haue knowne thee, and curse my cruell destinies, that haue made me to see thee, and rather will end my life most desperately, then suffer my sences, to conceiue one good thought of thee. Then leaue off where thou hast begun, for thou shalt rather see me massacre my selfe, then yeeld to the least part of thy desire.

CHAP. XXX.

How *Amphiador*, *Philotheta*, and *Praxentia* met. How the two Ladies preuenting *Amphiadors* lust, and departed towards *Assiria*.

AMphiador walking alone in a solitarie place, heard the woefull lamentation of a distressed Lady, who vttered these words: What misery am I brought into by mine owne doting folly, vpon that vnknowne knight, which neither regardeth me, nor I shall neuer see him againe: Fond woman that I am, thus to abandon my Fathers Court to liue in obscurity, where I was renowned for vertue: For who heard the name of Praxentia, that did not adore the same? And who was more reuerenced then my selfe that now haue brought my honour into disgrace? and for the loue of a stranger haue refused the loue of so mighty a Prince as Palian? O Persicles, thee may I curse, for by thy meanes is he thus absent, and thou hast lost him, or left him where he will neuer returne: Amphiador wondred much to heare her name Persicles, Palian, and Praxentia, which seuerall names he knew, maruelling who that should be: but seeing her silent, he drew neare to her, saying: Lady, hearing your laments, I could not chuse but pitty you: which maketh me thus

boyd to approach into our company, proffering my aſſiſtance to aid you in what I can. My friend ſaid Praxentia, againſt my will you are pitty to my eſtate, which if you doe pitty, then alſo ſuccour me, for I am brought low by too much griefe, and weak for want of ſuſtenance, Lady, ſaid he, my habitation is not farre hence, whether I will bring you, where you ſhall not want any thing you will deſire. Being come thither, they found Philotheta drowned in teares, the cauſe whereof he well knew, but Praxentia wondred at it, containing another inward ſorrow, to ſee ſo ſweet a creature in ſuch ſadnes. Phylotheta likewiſe marueiled what ſhe was, hoping by her company to receyue ſome comfort, which might hinder his practiſe.

He on the otherſide went forth againe to meditate, leaning them together, meaning nothing leſſe then to pitty either of them, but deuiſing meanes to attayne both their loues, which he was fully reſolued to enioy, though the deede were neuer ſo wicked, and the meanes neuer ſo hainous. Praxentia hauing well refreſht her ſelfe with ſuch good food as ſhe had receiued, demaunded Philothetaes cauſe of ſorrow. Aye me, ſaid ſhe, none ſo miſerable as I, this Tyrant that brought you hither, is my Father in law, whoſe minde is ſo wicked that he attempteth to win me to his luſt, which addeth much ſorrow to my heart, as I am wearie of my life: my name is Philotheta, daughter to the Duke of Ila, whom all men had thought to haue been ſince dead, but he being informed of the contrary by the Enchantreſſe, fled, bringing me hitherby force, where he intendeth to kéepe me as his bond-ſlaue, but the Heauens I hope will ordaine ſome ſuccour to my diſtreſſe, your helpe I cannot deſire, for that I ſuppoſe your ſelfe in the ſame ſtate I am in (that is) in diſtreſſe: to remedy which will, you are fallen into a place, that yeldeth no content, but rather contrarily to inſnare me in more miſery.

Before Praxentia could reply, Amphiador came in, entertained her with many counterfeit courteſies, comforting her with many faire ſpæches, proteſting ſo many ſeruices, duties, and promiſes, as none but one of ſo impudent a diſpoſition could haue found occaſion on ſuch a ſudden to proffer: the intent of which words Praxentia as forewarned, well vnderſtood, fearing ſome further miſchiefe would follow thereon. That day ſhe could haue no farther conference with Philotheta, for hée was ſtill in theyr company. That night they thought to haue lodged together, but hée ordered the contrary, by

which

which meanes, both that night, and for some three dayes after, they could find no opportunity to vtter their minds each to other. In the meane time he was neuer out of one of their companies, perswading Philotheta to yeeld her liking, so that he had protested, and vsing such speeches to Praxentia, as might draw her to a good opinion of him: which when he thought he had effected: one night when Praxentia little thought of such treachery, being ouerwhelmed in profounde sleepe, hee entred her chamber by a secret way, and comming to her bed side perceiuing her sleepe so soundly, without any more adoe, crept into the bed to her: she feeling one in the bed, was so amazed and affrighted, on the sudden, that before he could embrace her, as he intended, shee leapt out on the other side, and running to the doore, opened the same, to whom he called, saying, I beseech you stay, I meant you no harme by heauen I will not offer you iniury. What villaine art thou, said she, that seekest my dishonour? or what wicked pretence driues thee hether at such vnseasonable time, & in such audacious sort to affright me? neither intending your dishonour, nor vnder other pretence then vertuous, came your powre seruant Amphiador into your presence, but onely with thankefulnes, to make manifest vnto you my hearts true affection: therfore I beseech you shun me not, nor suspect me not, for my heart will sooner see it selfe torne in pieces, then think a thought to wrong your worthines: would I be so madde as trust thee, said she, thou mightest well repute me for immodest, and well might I blame my selfe if I sustayned wrong: therfore for this time I will leaue thee.

With that she made fast the doore, and hasted to Philothetaes lodging, knocking very hastily, withall calling aloud Philotheta, Philotheta, let me in, that she being a sleepe, was halfe amazed with the noyse, not daring at the first or second call to open the doore: but when she perceyued it was a womans voyce, she opened the doore, which was no sooner open, but Praxentia stept in, desiring to make fast the same againe. Which doyng, feare made Praxentia so mute, that vntill she had reassumed her memoriall sences to their proper vse, she could not speake a word. Whilest Philotheta with much sorrow beheld her estate, of demaunding the cause thereof: At last, she declared how Amphiador had vsed her. O most detestable villaine, sayd Philotheta, will the Fates suffer him to proceed in his lewdnes and not cut him off? or can we deuise no good meanes to

anoyd his intent? Lady, ſaid Praxentia, doe but ioyne with me, and you ſhall ſoone ſee, that betwixt us we will rid our ſelues out of his tyranny. O Lord, ſaid Philotheta, I ſhall thinke my ſelfe the moſt happieſt woman liuing, and for euer honour you, if by your counſell and helpe I may attaine this felicity. Then ſaid Praxentia, doe but this next night by ſome meanes conuay his ſwords into my Chamber, and there hide your ſelfe in ſecret vntill I come, in the mean time I will deale ſo with him this day, that he ſhall againe come to my chamber, without ſuſpect of our intent, but with meere hope to attaine my loue: where, when he is come, I will ſo worke with him that eyther we will by cunning out-reach him, or sheath the ſame into his bowels. All this ſayd Philotheta, will I conſtantly performe. Early the next morning Philotheta fetcht Praxentiaes apparell, which when ſhe had put on, ſhe went downe where ſhe knew Amphiador was: who eſpying her, preſently came to her, deſiring her to pardon his laſt nights ouerſight. Yes, ſayd ſhe, I was diſquyeted therewith more then I needed, conſidering you meant me no violence, as you proteſt: but it was a great folly in you to come at ſo vnſeaſonable a time, and not make the party acquainted therewith, Pardon me, I humbly deſire you, ſaid he, and withall pitty me that am enſnared in the bands of loue to your beauty, which will bee moſt pleaſing to my ſences, and preſerue my life, and whatſoeuer you ſhall demaund mee in recompence thereof, I will performe.

Many ſuch ſpeeches he vſed, and ſhe counterfeited many faint denials, which yet was intermingled with ſuch hope, that he perceyued ſhe would yeeld: and therefore hee the more earneſtly intreated, vowed, ſware, and proteſted to winne her conſent, which at laſt according to her appoyntment, ſhe graunted, but with ſuch conditions as furthered the purpoſe of their intended reuenge. He ioyfull thereof left her, and ſhe went to Philotheta declaring euery circumſtance, how ſhe had dealt with him. When night approached, hee left their company and went walking abroad, to meditate on his enſuing pleaſure, thinking by that he returned, they would be parted to their ſeuerall Lodgings. In which time Philotheta conuayed into the chamber two ſwords, which was all the weapons which was in the houſe, and hid her ſelfe cloſely from being ſeene. When hee thought it time, he came to the chamber dore, where he found Praxentia very ready to let him in, whoſe heart faintly trembled with feare at the

ſight

ſight of him, but yet ſhe ſhooke it off with as much courage as might be in a Woman. When he was entred and the doore made faſt, hauing firſt embraced her with a laſcinious kiſſe, which ſhe patiently endured, voyd of doubt by reaſon of her promiſe, he went to Bed, whileſt ſhe ſtood trifling, as if ſhe had bin moſt buſily vndreſſing her ſelfe. When ſhe ſaw him in Bed, ſhe came to the bed-ſide, giuing him a betraying kiſſe, vttering theſe words. Amphiador ſaid ſhe, How much doe I now differ from Chaſtity, that muſt yeeld to violate the ſame without the holy Rites of Marriage, wherein I ſhall caſt away my ſelfe, and make my Name in Oblique in the whole World, if you forſake me, of whoſe faith I haue no aſſurance? Tuſh (quoth he) feare not, but come to bed, and then I will make thee ſo faithfull a Promiſe, that thou ſhalt reſt therewith contented. That were (ſaid ſhe) to yeeld poſſeſſion before, and afterwards repent. By my ſoule (ſaid he) I will not doe ſo much as touch you before I be licenſed by your free conſent. Then (ſaid ſhe,) for my better aſſurance let mee binde your hands, and then I will without delay come to you. He accounted that requeſt to proceed from bathfull Feare, not from pollicie: thinking though his Hands were bound, he ſhould be good enough for her with his Legges, he granted it. Then ſhe tooke a ſcarfe which ſhe had brought of purpoſe, and therewith bound his hands ſo faſt, that it was impoſſible for him to vndoe them. Which done, Phylotheta ſtept forth, deliuering one of the Swords to Praxentia, and holding the other againſt his Breſt, ſaid: Now Amphiador, What hath thy lewdnes brought thee vnto, but to miſerie: thinkeſt thou (that hadſt no mercy in ſeeking our diſhonour) ſhalt finde Remorſe in vs to worke reuenge? Nay villanous traytor ſaid Praxentia, ſhould we ſuffer ſo vile a miſcreant to liue, we ſhould doe a wicked deed: for a man of thy impious condition will infect the World. Art thou ſo treacherous as thou careſt not what lawes thou violateſt, and yet ſo ſimple to be ouerreacht by a ſilly Woman? yet know whom thou haſt offended, and to whom thou wouldeſt haue done violence. Know I ſay traytor that my name is Praxentia, Daughter to the King of Perſia, that will worke reuenge vpon thee, worthie thy hainous acte. Philotheta maruelled when ſhe heard her Name, and he lay confounded with ſhame, his Coward heart fainting with ſuch feare, that with little violence it would haue beene ouercome. To make him more ſure the one of them bound his feet,

whileſt

whileſt the other ſtood ready to ſtab him if he ſtyred: Which done, they withdrew themſelues, conſulting which way to be rid of him. Moſt Noble Lady (ſaid Philotheta) your Prudence hath ſet vs at liberty from this Tyrant, whom (ſo it pleaſe you) we will leaue in this place, and not ſtaine our Innocent hands, with ſhedding ſuch impure bloud. But ſaid Praxentia, how ſhall we eſcape from hence? Eaſily (ſayd ſhe) for leauing him faſt bound, there is none to purſue vs, but we may with ſafety trauell whether it pleaſe you. When they had thus concluded, Praxentia came to him, vttering theſe ſpeeches. Amphiador, we cannot as yet reſolue how to worke ſufficient Reuenge vpon thee, therefore make no exclamation, but with patience abide our will, which will be too fauourable: for if we heare thee but once open thy mouth, we will in ſuch ſort vſe thee, that thou ſhalt wish thou hadſt followed our directions. Which ſaid, locking faſt the doores, they left him. Then they beganne to conſult, what to doe, Praxentia ſaying; Lady, it may be your determination is to returne into Arabia, which will be an occaſion of our ſeparation, For my purpoſe is to iourney into Aſſiria, vpon an occaſion that concerneth me no leſſe then my life: which I ſhall reueale vnto you, vpon your promiſe of ſecreſie. I were not worthy to liue (ſaid ſhe) would I reueale your Counſell. Then did ſhe repeat to her, her Loue to Montelyon, and how Palian croſt the ſame, vntill his departure with Perſicles, Philotheraes heart melted within her to heare that ſpeech, fearing to be diſappointed of her intent, and miſdoubting his Conſtancie, being troubled with extreame anguiſh that ſo great a Princeſſe ſhould be her corriuall: ſometimes diſpairing with a conceit that Montelyon did not eſteeme her according to his ſpeech, and her owne perſwaſion, but that he proffered his loue to her of a cuſtomable common courteſie, to try her, not of affection. Many other cogitations ſuddenly concurred in her braine, but ſeeing Praxentia expect a Reply, without further meditation ſhe made this replie. Moſt Noble Princeſſe, if you will accept of my company, I will in regard of your courteſie vndeſeruedly ſhowne to me, venture my ſelfe with you, and doe my beſt to further you in attaining your deſire. Praxentia was glad thereof. And with this reſolution in the morning they left that place, trauelling directly towards Aſſiria, chaunging their vper-Garments, to Palmers-gray, the beſt meanes to paſſe without moleſtation.

CHAP:

CHAP. XXI.

How the *Knight of the Oracle, Conſtantia,* and the reſt, hearing a lamentable cry, found *Amphiador* ſtarved to death.

AMphiador lay all that day vpon the Bed bound, ſometimes perſwading himſelfe they meant him no harme, and againe adding doubt to that perſwaſion, becauſe of Praxentia: but when it grew to be Night, he marueiled that they came not againe: then he began to ſuſpect that which was true indeed, that they were departed, which vexed him ſo much, that he would haue deſtroyed himſelfe if he could haue found weanes: continuing the length of that diſcomfortable Night in curſing his owne Fortune and Folly, that had brought him to that miſery: thinking the his greater diſcomfort, either to ſtarue there without food, or to preſerue his Life by eating his owne fleſh, and ſo dye a lingring death. Some foure dayes after, Fortune ſo brought things to paſſe, that the Knight of the Oracle, Delatus, Conſtantia and Alſala, with many others in their company, hauing loſt their way, lighted on this diſcomfortable place, where Amphiador lay for want of food, making ſuch outragious lamentation, that it pierced the Eares of the Knight, who firſt hearing the ſame, ſet ſpurs to his ſteed, entring the houſe, the doores whereof, he found open, and drawing his Sword, he found the Chamber from whence that pitteous cry proceeded, faſt lockt, which he brake open, and found Amphiador in ſuch a lamentable plight, that the Water ſtood in his eyes. Amphiador ſeeing him, cryed out to him for meat, as the thing he moſt wanted. What art thou ſayd he? My Name, qd. he, is Amphiador, wicked Amphiador, that for my ſinne endures this puniſhment. The Knight of the Oracle preſently vnbound him, and went with him downe to ſearch for Victuals, which Amphiador ſoone found. By this time Delatus and the reſt were entred, and Amphiador ſuddenly eſpying Alſala, whom he knew, was ſo aſtoniſht, that he fell downe dead. Farewell ſaid the Knight of the Oracle, hadſt thou dyed ſooner, then ſhould not ſome haue had cauſe to complaine of thy tyranny. They made ſhort tarriance in this place, for that it yelded ſo little comfort, but againe trauailed towards Aſſyria.

CHAP. XXXII.

How the Emperour of *Perſia* and *Macedonia* met, to conclude the Peace betweene *Perſicles* and the King of *Armenia*. How *Perſicles* erected a Pavilion to entertaine all ſtrangers. And how the *Knight of the Oracle* and *Conſtantia* arrived there: How *Perſicles* diſcouered them: and of the exceeding ioy was made for their ſafety. And how *Perſicles* knew the *Knight of the Oracle* to be his owne ſonne, and was afterward married to *Conſtantia*.

THe Emperours of Perſia and Macedonia, according to the Peace ratified betwixt Perſicles and the King of Armenia, met at the City of Piſos, where they were receiued by Perſicles in ſuch honourable, bountifull, and courteous ſort, as is not to be deſcribed. This City Piſos boundeth on the vtmoſt Confines of Aſſyria, not aboue a furlong diſtance from Armenia, on the edge whereof likewiſe ſtood the City of Liſar, rich and populous where the King of Armenia then lay: betweene thoſe two Cities, was ſo large a Valley of plaines, that the faire proſpects of both the Cities lay open to each others view: in the midſt of this Valley were the royall Tents of Perſia and Macedonia pitcht, and about them a number of Tents of gallant Knights, that came to beare them company: the Cities were both of them fortified with Garriſons of Soldiers, to preuent all occaſion of iniury that might be offered on eyther party. The Emperour of Macedonia likewiſe brought with him his three ſons, Mentus, Drurus, and Thetus, his Empreſſe, his faire Daughter Sabina, in whoſe company were the choyce Ladies of Macedonia. And ſuch Troupes of valiant Knights, that all the Valley was filled with their Tents and Pauilions. Perſicles truſting to the aſſurance Delatus had giuen him of Conſtantiaes releaſe, cauſed all the beautifull damzels in Aſſyria to be brought before him, electing out of them a hundred, for whom he cauſed moſt coſtly attyres of White to be prepared and deliuered to each of them. He cauſed alſo a moſt ſtately Pauilion to be erected in the view of all the reſt, of ſuch coſtly and curious worke, that all that beheld it admired the rare Workemanſhip thereof. Ouer the doore of this Pauilion were theſe Verſes written in Letters of Gold.

Honour

Honour, Valour, and Vertue, guard this place,
Where Harbour is for all that those embrace:
An absent Knight of honoured guifts and fame,
Shall be their Host, *Montelyon* is his name.
Here boldly enter, rest, repose, and feed,
For love to him, made *Persicles* doe this deed,
Who so he be, can tell where he remaines,
Shall have a principall guift to quite his paines.

Persicles entent in doing this was, that whatsoever Stranger came, that had not good prouision of his owne, should there finde Entertainment in honour of Montelyon: in whose memoriall, he had built the same, as a remembrance of his love and fauour. His intent being to draw all Strangers thither, by whose report (hoping he might heare some Newes of his beloued Friend Montelyon: Transil within few dayes had brought the Knight of the Oracle, and his Company into Assyria, where they met with an Assyrian of whom the Knight of the Oracle, demanded whose Tents were those they beheld. He declared so much as he knew: Where may we haue Lodging sayd he? That within a City, answered the Assyrian, for thither are none permitted to come without examination: But in the midst amongst those Tents there is one Pauilion, the most beautifullest that euer Eye beheld, built in remembrance of the Noble Knight Montelyon, that freed our Country from the Armenians oppression: in which place all that are Strangers, and without prouision of their owne haue Entertainement in this remembrance. Will thou direct vs thither (sayd he) and I will reward thee: I will sayd he. When they were come thither, according to the Assyrians report, they were honourably entertained, and Lodged in such sort as themselues desired. And for that it was very late, euery one departed to their place of rest, remitting conference vntill the next Morning.

Early in the Morning the Knight of the Oracle, Arming himselfe, mounted his Steed, and rode vp and downe vntill it was noone to behold the Tents, and beautifull situation of those two Cities, and some Tilts & Turneys that were performed by certain Knights returning at noone to conferre with Constantia his Mother about

the discovery of them to Persicles. Persicles hearing that many strangers were in Montelyons Pauilion, that day he disguised himselfe into the habite of one of his owne men, onely to view them, and to see whether his seruants vsed the so honorably as he intended they should. And comming into the roome where Constantia, the Knight of the Oracle, Delatus and Alfala was, at the first sight he knew Delatus and Montelyon, which was called the Knight of the Oracle, and viewing well Constantia, he likewise at the first sight knew her: Then did he immediately beleeue that the Knight of the Oracle had released her, which was Montelyon: which Delatus told him should be finished by his owne sworne. These ioyes encountring, fild vp his senses with such delight, that he was inforced to withdraw himselfe from being discouered, which at that time he would not be. Altering his disguise againe, and without further deliberation, he went to the King of Persias Tent, and finding him in a conuenient place, he vttered these kind words. Most renowned King, the Friendship and life I haue receiued by your fauour, without any merit of mine owne, hath made me most infinitely bound to your Excellency: yet neuertheless, I must request one further fauour at your hands, which you may with more safety grant, then deny, and thereby also make me and your selfe happy. My louing Friend, sayd he, whatsoeuer it be, I will not deny it you. I make the more doubt, sayd he, because I haue heard you vow the contrary, and yet though you performe that vow, it would procure you much discontent. A rash vow, sayd he, may be hidden, and therefore let me know your request, and it may be I will dispence therewith. My desire is, you would pardon Constantia your Daughter, and remit the offence committed by her, and him that caused her to leaue the Persian Court. Why my Lord, sayd he, doe you know where she is? First, I beseech you grant my request, and then I will reueale vnto you all that I know. For your sake, sayd he, I will freely accept her into my fauour. Then I most humbly thanke you, sayd he, both for her and my selfe: For it was my most vnhappy selfe, that was the cause of her departure, but since that time I haue not seene her vntill this day. For going to the Pauilion, which is named by Montelyon: this day I espyed her there, in company of Montelyon, which is called Knight of the Oracle: The King of Persia reioyced to heare that Newes, which pleased him so well, that he could not chuse but reueale it to the Empresse,

pzelle, who was ready to run forth of her Tent to see her. The Emperour and Empzelle with a goodly Traine, accompanyed by Pericles, who had sent for the hundred Damzels, and most of the Peeres of Assyria, to welcome Constantia, with great royalty, went to Montelyons Pauilion, the Emperour and Empzelle going before, and he comming after: that when their greetings were past, he might haue the more liberty to embrace Constantia. They entring the roome where Constantia was, conferring with Montelyon, knew her, and she them, and falling prostrate on her knees before them, whilest they welcommed her with such kindnesse, as if they had neuer conceiued offence against her. Whilest they welcommed the Knight of the Oracle, Pericles embraced Constantia, each weeping for ioy. O my God, sayd Pericles, neuer was I blest whilest this good happy houre, after so much sorrow, to enioy such pleasure. Montelyons approach brake off his speech, who kneeled before him. Nay my deere Friend sayd Pericles, kneele not for I am not worthy to be so honoured. My Lord (sayd Delatus) well may he doe it, for he is your owne Sonne, which you need not doubt of, for he freed his Mother, which none but himselfe could haue done. Ioy, Content, Ioy, Comfort and Content, sayd Pericles, could neuer haue happened to any Mortall man, then both this day to me, to find a Father, a Wife, and a Sonne, that this day knew not I had either Father, Wife, or Sonne: one so honourable and magnificent, the other so vertuous, beautifull, and louing, and the last so valiantly vertuous, magnanimous and prudent, that all the Worlds wealth cannot countervaile my riches. And turning to the Emperour, kneeling towne with them, he sayd, Renowned Emperor, I beseech you accept vs three as your Children, and into your fauor, remitting all displeasure conceiued against vs. Then vp the Emperor and Empzelle, and Delorat us and Piera all embrace them, shedding teares of ioy for this happy meeting. The Nobles welcomming the Knight of the Oracle, and the Lady Constantia, and such ioy was made on euery side as is not to be expzest. And parting from thence towards the City in great royalty, they were Welcommed thither by the Citizens, Nobles, Marchants, and Artizans, with great Royalty, where the Emperor vsed these speeches.

See here my Friends of Assyria, your Liege Lord and Soueraigne, the Son of Constantia my Daughter, and your Lord Pericles,

cles: How may you applaud the bounty of Heauen, prouiding for you ſuch a Noble Prince: Then taking Conſtantia by the hand, he ſayd: Here Perſicles take my daughter, I giue her thee, as freely as the Heauens gaue her me, that Marriage may ioyne hands, as true Loue hath united your hearts many yeares ſince. He tooke that gift with as great ioy, and in as high eſtimation, as if he had deliuered him the whole Worlds Monarchy, ſaying: Moſt mighty Emperor I know not how to render ſufficient thanks, in that your Highnes is pleaſed to enrich and honour me with your worthy daughter which is the onely thing I alwayes deſired: For which, I hope to ſhew ſuch deſerts hereafter, as neither ſhe ſhall be diſcontented, nor your Maieſty repent your gentle deed.

CHAP. XXXIII.

How the two Ladyes *Philotheta* and *Praxentia* arrived at the Pauilion, and how *Phylotheta* diſcouered to *Montelyon*, *Praxentias* Loue to him, to make tryall if hee loued her, whom ſhe her ſelfe moſt entirely loued.

THe end of this dayes ioy had brought the two Ladies Praxentia and Philotheta after long trauell vnto the Citty Walles, where (in their Palmers Weeds) they heard the Newes, and ſaw the Triumph, where the Knight of the Oracle bare away the prize, whom they were informed to be Montelyon, and ſonne to Perſicles and Conſtantia: This newes affected both their hearts with exceeding ioy. Praxentia hoping to enioy his Loue, and Phylotheta purpoſing to liue no longer, then to liue in hope to doe the like: taking the Entertainment of the Knight of the Oracles Pauilion, which yeelded them ſuch ſecurity as they deſired. Praxentia bethinking her ſelfe of a courſe to effect her deſire, brake her mind to Philotheta in theſe Words. Lady Philotheta, I am more beholding vnto you for vndertaking this trauell for my ſake, then I ſhall euer liue to requite: Notwithſtanding, for that my paſſions craue pitty and your good helpe, I beſeech you ayde me in this extremity, I haue made my Name and Fortunes known vnto you, and how it will be in vaine for me to ſtay, for ſhould I manifeſt my loue, it would turne to my euerlaſting diſhonour, I will therefore onely make my being here knowne to none but the Knight of the Oracle, which ſhall be done

done by this meanes, if you will for my sake undertake it. In this habit you may as safely goe without being knowne, as if you had never beene seene, and finding him out, giue him knowledge of my being here, of my loue, and of the Misery I haue endured for his sake, vttering the same in such forme of words, as shall best like you: this will be the meanes to bring me comfort: and if for my sake you will take this paines, I will hereafter prostrate my life at your feet. Philotheta promised her that she would doe it the next day, whatsoeuer ensued thereon, as faithfully as she did desire, and if it were but to try his Constancy.

Early in the Morning, Philotheta disguising her selfe so cunningly that she could by no meanes be knowne, left the Pauillion to seeke opportunity to deliuer her Message: and comming to the City-Gates with a premeditated excuse, if she were examined, where she found no resistance, but comming to the Pallace, she entred into the great Hall, where she stayed to see the royalty of the Court, vntill she espyed the Knight of the Oracle, onely attended by his Page, passe by into the Garden, her Mayden fast treading chast steppes after him, vntill he looking backe, espying a Palmer follow him, stayed, with courteous speech demanding if he would speake with him. Who said: Knight of the Oracle. I haue a matter of secresie to deliuer vnto you. The most vertuous, beautifull, and constant Lady Praxentia, whom you well know, hauing euer since she saw you first, loued you, though without comfort, enduring much sorrow for your absence, regarding more her loue to you, then her owne life, Parents, and Country, and hath for your sake, left her Pompe & dignity to liue in sorrow and misery to finde you out, who remaineth now in the Pauillion, where for your sake all strangers are harboured, in such sorrow and anguish, as did you but behold the same, your vertuous mind could not chuse but pitty her. This am I bold to vtter vnto you, not sent hither, but in pitty of her, and to doe you good, she being the onely Daughter of the mighty Emperor of Macedonia. Palmer, said he, I commend thy good meaning, and with that I could follow thy counsell, which bringeth much disquiet to my heart: I pitty her more then she doth her selfe, and could wish not to haue beene borne, rather then she should doe her selfe wrong, for my sake: she is worthy to be beloued, and I not the Honour shr intendeth me: yet can I not without as great and greater tor-

ment

ment (then ſhe endureth) after my affections that are already ſetled, where I yet reape no hope of comfort, and am kept from by many difficulties, that maketh me equall to her in ſorrow. I ſpeake not this with intent you ſhould tell it her, for that were to make her more deſperate, if your words be true: but I feare me, you are ſent by her, which if it be ſo, you ſhall doe me wrong, and her no good, therefore I pray you diſſwade her if you can, for a ſtrangers counſell in ſuch matters may prevaile much: and if you can bring me Newes that ſhe hath revolted from this Loue, I ſhall thinke my ſelfe moſt happy. Yes, ſayd the Palmer, I would returne to you againe, if I knew which way I might conveniently come to ſpeake with you: I will be (ſayd he) to morrow without the City about this time, hoping to heare better newes of her by thy perſwaſions: Then giuing the Palmer a Rich Jewell for his paines, they parted. Philotheta out of the Pallace, and he into the Garden, meditating on that which he had heard. Philotheta by this time was returned to the Pauillion, vttering the whole ſumme of the conference ſhe had with the Knight of the Oracle vnto Praxentia: With which ſhe was ſo grieued, that Philotheta expected when ſhe would haue yelded vp the Ghoſt, fearing that ſhe would haue run mad, which to prevent, ſhe ſayd. Be not ſo impatient, but hearken to my counſell, I haue appointed to come to him to Morrow, at which time I will deale ſo effectually with him, that he ſhall come and ſpeake with you. When ſeeing your Laments, there is no doubt but he may be won to conſent.

This ſomewhat ſatisfied Praxentia, yet her Mind was ſo full of griefs and vexation, that her Eyes could take no reſt, with ſuch affection ſhe expected the next Newes. Philotheta was not voyd of care, as ſhe had good cauſe, vndertaking a matter againſt her ſelfe, yet to make aſſured tryall of his Conſtancy, ſhe did it, but being alone, ſhe Meditated on the doubtfull iſſue of this attempt, which would bring her either much Joy, or Sorrow: ſometimes perſwading her ſelfe, it was her ſelfe he loued, that he was conſtant and that no perſwaſions could alter him: yet ſhe thought Praxentias birth, beauty, & laments, might ouercome him, and the rather for that he had no aſſurance of her Loue, nor euer to ſée her againe. Thus did this faire Lady torment her ſelfe with contrarieties of doubts, longing as much, or rather more then Praxentia, for the next Morrowes ſpéech.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIIII.

Of the Treaſons practiſed againſt the *Knight of the Oracle.*

The King of Armenia ſeeing ſuch a league concluded by meanes of this marriage betweene the Emperours of Perſia, and Perſicles, enuying his good, thought that he was likely to preuaile nothing againſt him by meanes thereof, called vnto him a Knight, whom he moſt fauoured, and had alwayes beene counſelled by, named Ciſor, and vnto him he vttered his diſcontent, who preſently counſelled him to breake the peace, and ſuddenly to ſurprize the City. The King liked not that counſell, but rather deſired by ſome ſecret meanes either to poyſon Perſicles and the Knight of the Oracle: or elſe to ſet ſome diſcord betweene them and the Emperour of Macedonia, by which meanes the peace might be broken, and the ambiguity of the doubt be left vnended, whereby hee might renew his warre. Ciſon promiſed to performe ſome thing to that effect: who preſently, finding out Palian, vttered his mind to him in theſe words. Noble Prince, I maruell that you ſuffer your glory to be darkned by this vpſtart Knight, that nameth himſelfe of the Oracle. Can it be that ſo honourable a minde as yours ſhould brooke ſuch indignities? is not Aſſyria yours by right, are you not more noble by birth? are you not euery way as worthy to be as famous as he is? You liue here in ſecurity, ſuffering him and his father that ſcorneth you, to carry away the Palme and prize of honour. Are all the Knights in Armenia too weake to cope with him? doth not his behauiour ſhew that he ſcorneth you? hath hee not alone croſt your good fortune, then liue not to be laught at, but to reuenge. Ioyne you with the Emperour of Macedonias ſonnes, who are of the ſame minde I am, and I will lay you downe ſuch a plot as ſhall abate his bravery. If theſe Knights and ſuch as are now come out of Macedonia and Perſia, cannot foyle them, then ſhall you liue in contempt of the World, and be accounted theyr inferiour. Ciſor ſaid he, thou renueſt my griefe a freſh, for I haue drunke ſo much of ſorrow in that kinde of diſcontentment, that my heart is ouercome therewith, and would faine worke my releaſement. If you would bee ſecret, and ſweare to aſſiſt mee, I would reueale you the whole

depth of my heart: vpon his proteſtations, hee reuealed his loue to Praxentia, and how he was croſt by Montelyon, and withall, what had paſt ſince, and of her eſcape out of Perſia, which ſhee did onely for his loue that regarded her not, and how much he deſired meanes of reuenge: his minde being apt to entertaine any complot were it neuer ſo diſhonourable. Ciſor then ſaid, conferre with the Emperours ſonnes, and diſcouer to them with what earneſtneſſe Praxentia hath ſought his loue, and receiuing ſcorne for her affection, and diſdaine for her good will, hath in a deſperate ſort (aſhamed to be ſo reiected) ſtole from the Court of the king of Perſia, either to deſtroy herſelfe, or wilfully to liue in perpetuall exile: when they heare this, their hearts will eaſily be wonne to reuenge her wrong: which done, let them alone to meditate thereon. Ciſor hauing in this ſort whetted him on, left him, which ſo much preuailed, that he put the ſame in practiſe with the Emperours ſonnes, that they began mortally to hate Montelyon. Agreeing to arme themſelues in ſuch Armour as none but Ciſor ſhould know them, and for ſome few dayes to lodge in the Pauilion, and there to deuiſe which way to worke him ſome diſgrace. Vpon this concluſion they parted, euery one to prouide themſelues of armour for that purpoſe.

CHAP. XXXV.

How the *Knight of the Oracle*, arrieud at the Pauilion, diſguiſed to ſatisfie *Praxentia*. How he was diſcouered by *Palian*, how *Palian* and the King of Macedonias ſonnes would haue murdered him. How he ſlew one of them, and was accuſed by *Praxentia* of a Rape, which brake the concluded League.

THe time being come, and Philotheta not failing, met the Knight of the Oracle to doe her meſſage. How now Palmer ſaid he, doeſt thou bring me newes that Praxentia hath giuen ouer her loue? if thou haſt tell me, if not I pray thee trouble me not. My Lord, ſaid Philotheta, ſhe rageth moſt extreamely, and I feare me, will doe her ſelfe ſome violence vnleſſe you pitty her. What cannot I doe ſaid he, although it pincheth my heart to heare of her ſorrow: what ſhould I ſay more? or what wouldeſt thou with me to doe, to eaſe her and yet reſerue my loyalty? Sir, replyed Philotheta, may you conſider that ſhe is honourable, vertuous, fayre, and the Daughter

of

of a King, worthy to be beloued, and it may be the Lady whom you loue, is not comparable to her in any of these giftes: No, nor in loue, which may peraduenture loue another, and then shall you wrong your selfe and iniury her, expecting that which you haue no assurance of.

Peace Palmer qd. he, if my fortunes proue so bad, the greater will be my misery: therefore tell me what thou wouldest haue me doe: my L. said she, had I not promised her to bring you to speake with her, she would haue destroyed her selfe ere this: therefore vouchsafe me such fauour, that I may performe my word, which may be a meane to end this malladv. Didst thou know, qd. he, how vnwilling I am to doe it, I thinke thou wouldst not request it; but to satisfie her of that, which peraduenture she will not credit by thy report, and at thy request, I will come to her this euening. Will then farewell qd. he. Philothera being parted from him, by the way vttered these speeches. O that fortune would fauour me so much, and bleſſe me with that felicity, to be the party this worthy Knight so constantly loueth. By this she was come to the Pauilion, where euen then there entred foure Knights in black armour, gallantly mounted, by their outward habite portended some fatall stratagem: which were Palian & the 3. sonnes of the King of Macedon, who had vowed either secretly or openly to plot the death of Montelyon: taking vp their Lodging there to complot their treason. The day being past, which the Knight of the Oracle ouerpast in many solitary meditations, to the great griefe of Persicles and Constantia, who wondred thereat, he went to his chamber, apparelling himselfe in the habit of one of the kings seruants, onely gyrding his sword to his side, went vnto the Pauilion, concealing himselfe as closely as he could, but the heauens ordaining him to endure some misery, and the eyes of enuy and suspition, discouering him to Palian, who espied his comming thither, and being entred the Pauilion, he was met by Philothera, who with such carefulnesse expected his comming, conducting him into the place, where Praxentia was, which went so sore against her heart to doe, that with very griefe shee was ready to die: whither treacherous Palians eyes watcht him. Praxentia espying him, could not abstaine from blushing exceedingly, her owne heart accusing her of immodesty, to reueale that which she would haue concealed. Shee saluted her, vttering these words. Most noble Princesse, to fulfill your

deſire, and ſhew my gratitude vnto you for your friendſhippe beſtowed on him that is not worthy thereof. I am come to you, deſiring you not to miſconceiue of me, nor condemne me of inhumanity, that am not mine owne, and therefore I cannot giue my ſelfe vnto you I haue vttered vnto the Palmer that which I will now conceale as loath to offend you, yet conſtrained thereto, deſiring you to commaund my life, if you pleaſe, for that ſhall be at your diſpoſition, otherwiſe I cannot imploy my ſelfe to your liking. I haue long ſince knowne of your good will to me, which Palian by his ſubtilty increaſed, of whoſe loue and proceedings I know ſo much, that I thinke I ſhall wrong him to fulfill your requeſt: my ſelfe was the man that ſhould haue ioyned your hands, when he tooke my habit and name vpon him. which I preſume here to vtter, that thereby you may remember my innocency in that complot, and how conſtantly I haue vowed my ſelfe to another.

Praxentia what with anger, ſhame, and griefe, ſtood like one mute, vexed that he knew of Palians act, ſhame to make loue contrary to the property of her kinde, and grieued to be diſappointed: all which together not ſuffering her to ſpeake, vntill at laſt theſe paſſions, and her burning loue ſo ouercame her, that kneeling downe ſhe ſaid.

Good knight blame me not, nor doe not condemne me of immodeſty, but grant pitty to my torment. He taking her vp, deſired her not to kneele to him that was not worthy thereof, nor able to deſerue it: then taking him by the hand, ſhe deſired him to ſit downe by her vpon the bed, beckning to Philotheta to depart the roome.

To repeat what manner of behauiour Praxentia vſed, and the words ſhe ſpake, would haue made any modeſt eare to bluſh to heare of: but ſeeing that nothing would preuaile, rage and luſt ſo ouerruled her, that in bitter exclaimes ſhe cryed out: Inhumane, diſloyall, & ſelfe honourable knight, doeſt thou requite my loue with this diſdaine? or thinkeſt thou I will liue to beare the blot of thy refuſall? At the concluſion of which words, Thetus entred the roome, & with his ſword drawne, ran at him, who by good fortune beholding him, ſtarted aſide, otherwiſe he had beene ſlaine, yet he was ſore wounded, wherewith he drew his ſword, ſtriking at Thetus, and at euery blow wounding him. Philotheta hearing the noyſe, came in & ſeeing the Knight of the Oracle wounded, with feare griefe, and amazement cryed out, helpe, helpe, the Kings ſon will be murdered. The Eccho of

her

her ſhrill voyce ſounded throughout the whole Pauilion, and both the ſeruants and other Knights came running thither, but before they came, he had gotten Thetus, and ouerthrowne him, thruſt his ſword into his body. By this time Palian and his two brethren came in, who ſeeing Thetus ſlayne cryed out: Stay the Traytor, hee hath murdered Thetus, ſon to the King of Macedonia. Praxentia hearing that, tore her hayre, rent her garments, and diſfigured her face in ſuch ſort as was lamentable to behold. Some began to lay hands on the Knight of the Oracle, but his fathers ſeruants knowing him ſtood in his defence: Then began there a hote combat on both parts, and many were ſlayne. Praxentia being now diſcouered, was knowne to Palian and her two brethren, to whom ſhee cryed, Reuenge my ſhame, and my brothers death on this wicked Knight, who ſeeketh by violence to diſhonour me, hath ſlaine my brother: What griefe was this to Philotheta you may iudge: and how much it vexed him to be thus betrayed, cannot be vttered: ſtanding in his owne defence, againſt ſuch as would haue apprehended him, that knew him not, vntill he was grieuouſly wounded, and many of them ſlaine, in which time newes thereof was come to the hearing of Perſicles, the Emperour of Perſia, and the King of Macedonia, who with all haſte came thitherwards: The Souldiers likewiſe hearing of the Knight of the Oracles diſtreſſe, brake the conditions of the concluded peace, and by multitudes ran forth of the Citie to preſerue them. Perſicles firſt entred the Tent, next him the Kings of Perſia and Macedonia, giuing commandement vpon paine of death, that no man ſhould ſtrike a blow. Yet notwithſtanding, raſhnes and heady force ſo ouercame them, that it was long before they were appeaſed. And the Emperour ſeeing Praxentia there, in ſuch ſort diſfigured, demanded if any could tell the cauſe of that miſchiefe: Firſt Praxentia ſpake being moſt guilty, yet firſt thinking to excuſe her ſelfe: Noble Emperour, my brother you ſee is ſlaine in reſcuing me from that Knights violence. The Knight of the Oracle kneeling downe before the Emperour, ſayd: My noble Grand-father, I ſlew him in mine owne defence: neyther did I know what hee was, being my ſelfe trained hither to my death. More he would haue ſayd, but the Souldiers hauing entred the Pauilion, reſted not vntill they had gotten vnto him, and he to ſatisfie them, and auoyde further miſchiefe, departed with them to the Citty. Then did the

Emperour and Perſicles comforts the King of Macedonia, but he vexed with his Sonnes death, and his Daughters diſgrace, and vyged by his other Sonnes importunacy, ſaid: Emperour of Perſia, I am now much wronged, and too much abuſed by thee and thy Progenie, by whoſe falſehood I ſee my Children lye dead before my face: How ſhould I then be contented? By Heaven I ſweare, I will revenge this villany. King of Macedonia (ſaid Perſicles) I defie thee, for accuſing me or mine of any diſhonour, and thou ſhalt ſee and finde this Accuſation is falſe; why elſe are thy ſonnes here deteined, with my enemy Paliard by whoſe Complot this miſchiefe, was pretended againſt my ſonne, though the puniſhment lighted upon themſelues.

CHAP. XXXVI.

Of the griefe *Philotheta* endured for this misfortune. How ſhee was taken, and carried to the *Armenian* Hoſte. Of *Ralea's* misfortune: And the meſſage ſhe deliuered to the *Knight of the Oracle.*

PHilotheta ſeeing how vnfortunately all things fell out, withdrew her ſelfe out of ſight, and in bitter exclaimes lamented her hard fortune, but moſt of all, that ſhe was the cauſe of Montelyons comming thither, which had ſo neere endangered his deareſt life. Therefore ſhe ſhrowded her ſelfe vntill it was night, which being come, ſhe trauelled further into the Country, and there by ſelling a Jewell, and good fortune, not being diſcryed, ſhe altered her old habit into her right forme ſtaying, certaine dayes in a Village, ſome ſix miles diſtant from the Citty of Piſos, in the houſe of an ancient Lady named Ralea, to whom ſhe related her misfortunes, procured by Amphiador, concealing her Loue to Montelyon, which ſhe durſt not commit to her ſecreſſe. This Ralea being a woman of great wiſedome, vſed Philotheta wondrous kindely, promiſing in words, and her deeds ſhewing it, that if ſhe would ſtay with her, ſhe would as dearely tender her, as her owne daughter, whom ſhe cauſed continually to accompany Philotheta. She reioyced at this good fortune, and being alone ſhe vttered theſe ſpeeches. Praxentia, thee onely may I accuſe for this miſerie, for whom I vndertooke a taske, which my heart euen then abhorred, and now repent, not ſo much intending to procure thee that thou

thou deſiredſt, as to ſatisfie my owne diſquyet ſences, by the ſame meanes hauing drawn the moſt loyall knight into danger of his life, whoſe blood thou didſt ſeeke to ſpill, elſe wouldeſt thou not ſo dishonorable & falſly haue accuſed him. The conſideration of which ſtratageme, drew ſuch a flood of teares from her eyes, that ſhe could not ſtop their paſſage. Which Ralca eſpying, demanded the cauſe thereof, but ſeeing Philotheta make no reply, ſhe ſayd Philotheta, I pitty your eſtate, and would gladly know the cauſe, that I might vſe my indeauour to comfort you, Philotheta truſting to vertue, diſcloſed to her the loue he bare to Montelyon, and all that had paſſed twixt her and Praxentia, as is before rehearſed. Ralca thereby noting her beauty, commended the ſame: promiſing her, that if with patience ſhe would quiet her ſelfe ſome few dayes, ſhe would vſe all meanes poſſible to comfort her.

Montelyon hauing recouered his wounds, gathered together a mighty hoſte, and brought them vnto the City of Piſos, whither were aſſembled the choyſe ſouldiers, noblemen, knights, and gentlemen of Perſia, to fight in their Emperours behalfe, who entrencht themſelues without the City. The King of Macedonia and Armenia likewiſe had gathered together ſo mighty an Army, as might haue bene thought able to make a conqueſt of the World, who pitched their Tents about the City in Armenia, where the King of Macedonia and Armenia lay, Montelyons heart was fired with deſire to driue backe thoſe foes, not ſtaying to giue them leaue to make the firſt challenge but humbling himſelfe vpon his knee, before the Emperour and his Father, vttered theſe ſpeaches. Moſt mighty Emperour, and my noble Father, I haue already I hope ſatisfied you of my innocency, being trained by ſome ſubtilty to my intended death, by Praxentia and her brethren: but for that mine honour hath bene blemiſhed by that infamous accuſation, and the common people reſt vnſatisfied, and my foes vnreuenged, I humbly craue your licence, that I may ſend defiance to my falſe accuſers, and by challenge acquite my ſelfe, which am conſtrained thus haſtily to deſire, for that my heart will abide extreame torture vntill it bee ſatisfied. The Emperour reioycing at his forwardneſſe, and ſeeing Perſicles willing to haue it ſo, gaue his conſent. Which done Montelyon left them and arming himſelfe in an Armour of white, which he had cauſed to be made of purpoſe, that no man ſhould know him, rode into the

field

field betwixt both Campes, and by a Herald ſent defience into the Campe of the Armenians. King of Armenia, there is a Knight whom you may behold in the field, that hath ſent defiance to all the knights in this Armie, eſpecially to Pallian, whom he accuſeth to bee a moſt diſloyall and diſhonourable Knight, not worthy to be named a Knight, that he moſt falſly ſought to betray Montelyons life, and withall he offereth by combate to proue againſt all Knights, that Montelyon is a Knight both honourable and vertuous, and that Praxentias accuſation is moſt falſe and untrue. This meſſage was no ſooner delimered, but thouſands of Knights made ſute to combat him firſt: but Palian to whom it principally belonged, to defend his owne honour, deſired his fathers conſent, and obtained it, preſently arming himſelfe, and gallantly mounted, rode into the field, to him.

Montelyon deſirous of reuenge, and his heart inwardly tormented with griefe, met Palian with a furious encounter, he anſwering him with the like, breaking theyr lances with great comelineſſe: then drawing theyr ſwords, began the combat, which was ſoone ended for within few blowes, Montelyons ſword burſt, that hee was enforced to cloſe with Palian, with ſuch force wrinking his ſworde from him, and with the pummell thereof ſtriking him ſo violently on the head, that he bruiſed his head and ouerthrew him, every one thinking he had been dead. Which was no ſooner done, but Menſus eldeſt ſon to the King of Macedonia, being ready armed, greeted Montelyon with theſe words. Knight, thou haſt undertaken a tedious taſke to Combat all the Knights in this Campe, yet I hope thou ſhalt neuer doe that, for my ſelfe will abate thy courage. If they were as many more quoth Montelyon, I feare not all: if thou commeſt to combat me hold thy tongue, and beſtirre thy hands, for I will haue about with thee. With that they gaue each other many cruell blowes and receyued ſome wounds, till Montelyon againe ouercharging his ſword with his vnmeaſurable ſtrength, brake the ſame, which ſo vexed him, that he ruſht vpon Menſus to haue cloſed, but hee knowing his intent, auoyded him, and before he could turne about, gaue him ſome blowes, which pierced to his armour and fleſh, the blood ranne downe. Montelyon hauing the hilt of his broken ſword ſtill in his hand, flung the ſame with ſuch violence, that lighting ſhort on Menſus horſe head, ſtroke him downe dead, his maiſter

ker hauing much adoe to get from him without harme: whilest Mensus was mounting himselfe on a fresh Stéed, Montelyons Squire had brought him the Sword was giuen him by the Hesperian Nymphes, which when he grasped, he sayd: Had I armed myselfe with thée, my Foes had felt some smart, and myselfe lesse disgrace. Meeting againe, such cruell blowes were dealt, that their Armour was mangled and the bloud appeared in many places, but Montelyon charged his Foe so hard, that in short space he got the vantage, and wounded Mensus so sore, that had he not béene rescued he had eyther dyed, or béene forced to yéeld: that Montelyon returned with victory, to the great reioycing of the Assyrians, especially of the Emperour and Persicles.

Ralea that day left her house, according to her promise to Philotheta, to try whether Montelyon did affect her or no, comming to the Court at such time as Montelyon was newly vnarmed, and had his few wounds drest, a messenger giuing him knowledge of her comming. Being come to him, and all auoyded the Chamber, she sayd: Noble Prince, I come to bring you newes, that not many dayes since, there hapned to come to my house a Lady in disguise of a Palmer, desiring that I would for certaine dayes entertaine her, vntill the Wars were ended, for that she had a message to deliuer vnto you from a Lady in Arabia, named Philotheta, which she thought good to conceale for a time, vntill you had better leasure to heare it, and to performe that which she requested. Notwithstanding, for that I honour you aboue all men, and would shew my duty to you in any respect, I haue aduentured to giue you knowledge thereof without her knowledge, being ready to bring her vnto you at any time, if you please to heare the same. Montelyons heart was excéedingly comforted to heare Phylotheta named, much more that she had sent to sée him, and most of all what the message should be, how she could tell where he was, or how she could remember him, that had neuer but once séene him: sitting in a deepe and silent meditation, but before he had ended the same, a Messenger and Seruant of Raleaes entred, vttering these words. Madam, since you departed much sorrow hath befalne vs, for certaine companies of the Armenian Hoste haue ransackt your house, [illegible] Cattell, carryed away the Lady, and consumed all your [illegible] with fire. Ralia with that fell downe in a deadly Trance, [illegible]

couered, vttered theſe Wordes. My noble Lord ſayd ſhe, that Lady is the moſt beautifull Phylotheta, that hath long honoured you with a conſtant Loue, it was ſhe that in the diſguiſe of a Pulmer came as a Meſſenger to you from Praxentia, who was guiltleſſe of that intended practiſe, her Modeſty with-holding her from vttering what ſhe was, and vndertaking that for Praxentia, to make tryall of your vertue, and which way your affections were bent. Redeeme her my Lord, if it be poſſible, for ſhe is the moſt vertuous Lady liuing: theſe words ended, ſhe dyed, which were ſufficient to ſet Montelyons heart on fire, being ready to arme himſelfe, but Raleaes ſeruant ſeeing it, told him it was too late purſue them, for by that time they were in the Hoaſt.

CHAP. XXXVII.

How the King of *Armenia* ſent *Phylotheraes* Picture to *Delfurno* Emperour of *Almaigne*, who promiſed to ayde him againſt *Perſicles*. Of divers combats that *Delfurno* maintayned in defence of her beauty.

PHylotheta being now in the Armenian Hoaſt, by reaſon of her exceeding beauty, was preſently carryed by the Captaine to the Tent of the King of Macedonia, who no ſooner ſaw her, but hee preſently thought her a preſent fit for the greateſt Potentate in the World, and withall fearing their Forces were too weake for the puiſſant Army of their Foes, conſulted with the King of Armenia about it, and at laſt concluded to ſend Ambaſſadors vnto Almaigne vnto Delfurno, that then newly ſucceeded his Father in the Empire, being a Prince of great valour: which Embaſſage was committed to two Noblemen, one of Armenia, the other of Macedonia The contents whereof was to treat with him of ayde and withall, to proffer him that Lady, whoſe Picture they carried with them, being drawne by an exceeding cunning workeman. The Embaſſadors departed, and being arriued, were admitted to Delfurnoes preſence, one of them vttering their Meſſage in theſe words.

Moſt renowned Emperour, the Kings of Armenia and Macedonia, ſend friendly greetings to your Highneſſe, deſiring your ayde againſt their mighty Foes, the King of Aſſiria and Perſia, who are now ioyned together with oppreſſion, and vniuſt warre to offer them

iniu-

iniurie, the ſon of Perſicles, hauing in moſt diſhonourable ſort deflowred Praxentia, and ſlew Thetus her Brother, ſeeking her reſcue: Weemes, my Lords, hauing nothing of more worth then a moſt beautifull and vertuous Lady, who ſurpaſſeth all the Ladies that euer eye beheld, preſent her vnto you, as being fit for none, but a man of ſuch honour and dignity as your ſelfe: whoſe counterfeit imperfectly drawne, we preſent vnto your Highneſſe, deſiring your aſſiſtance to the ayde of vertue, and ſuppreſſing of wrong, which agreeth with your magnanimity. Delfurno hearing of theſe ſpeeches, and viewing the Picture well, for a while ſtood in a ſtudy. At laſt he made them anſwer thus. I know not vpon what ground I ſhould warre againſt Aſſyria and Perſia, that neuer did me wrong, yet I would willingly aſſiſt your Lords, not drawne thereunto by this preſent, that I eſteeme not, but for the loue I beare them, and to puniſh ſuch diſhonour as their Foe hath ſhowne: Therefore returne your Lords this anſwere, that within three Moneths I will be in Armenia, and bring with me ſuch a power as ſhall vanquiſh their foes, and ſet them in peaceable poſſeſſion of their rights. The Embaſſadors after they were honourably entertained, and ſumptuouſly feaſted, departed with this ioyfull newes, which added both comfort and reſolution to the Armenian Hoaſt.

Delfurno being alone, commanded the Picture to be brought into his Chamber, which he viewed and reviewed, beholding the counterfeit with ſuch a ſurfeiting eye, that he began to affect the abſent Lady, by beholding her preſent Picture. Afterwards calling before him the ancienteſt Captaines and Commanders that were imployed in his Fathers warres, he commanded them to muſter an Army of forty thouſand ſtrong, of the beſt Souldiers in his Empire, and with all ſpeed to conduct them to the Hoaſt in Armenia, neither ſtaying his comming, nor expecting other command from him for he would be there before them. This done, he cauſed a moſt rich and coſtly Armour to be wrought of exceeding ſtrength, wherewith he armed himſelfe, cauſing a Squire that attended him, to couer the Picture with a rich Maile: he departed vnknowne of any, with this entent, by combat to make all Knights he met, to confeſſe his Ladies beauty ſurpaſſed all others, vntill he came into Armenia, where he determined to challenge all Knights whatſoeuer in that behalfe. Where being vnknowne, and carrying the Picture couered, he ar-

riuer ſending his Squire with this Meſſage vnto the Generall.

Noble Generall, my Maſter being a Knight of a ſtrange Countrey, hauing trauailed many Miles in ſearch of Aduentures, happening to arriue neare this Hoaſt, being neyther foe to this Countrey, nor friend to Perſicles, deſireth that with your fauour he may make tryall of his valour againſt the Knights of this Campe, which he will vndertake in defence of his Ladyes vertue, beauty and worthineſſe, whom he will maintaine in ſingle combat againſt all commers, to exceed all others. The King returned this anſwer. Tell thy Maſter, he is welcome, and ſhall haue our free conſent to that he requireth: but withall let him take this friendly warning from me, that he beware what he vndertake, leſt the valour of theſe Knights turne him to repentance. The Squire returned with this anſwer to his Maſter, who preſently hung the vayled Picture vpon the body of a faire ſpreading Oake, himſelfe reſting thereby as a Guardiant, and ready to combate him that came next.

The Knights of Armenia and Macedonia hearing of this ſtrange Knights braue Challenge, prepared to iouſt with him, and the firſt was a young Knight of Armenia, named Tellutus, who loued Briſa Daughter to the Duke of Linſus, who ſuppoſed her beauty by reaſon of his entyre loue, to excell all, but his Fortune was croſſe, and he at the ſecond courſe ouer throwne.

The ſecond that iouſted was Arnon, a Knight of Macedonia, that maintayned three courſes againſt him with great agility, but at the fourth he was vnhorſed. Diuers other Knights Iouſted him, and had the like Fortune, and his valour bare away the Prize from them all.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

How the *Knight of the Oracle* leaving his Parents in diſguiſe, was entertayned by the King of *Armenia*.

NOw it fell out that Montelyon hauing heard of the Damzels carrying away from Releaes houſe by the Enemy, which he little thought it had beene Philothea, ſtudied how to reuenge her: firſt he thought it beſt to be attempted by force of Marke, but that courſe ſeemed too tedious: then he bethought himſelfe of ſome ſpeedier meane, for long delay would pinch his heart. Theſe contrarious thoughts

thoughts ayming him to his writs end: When he had long studyed and yet could resolue of nothing, he mounted his Steed, and in an Armour vnknowne, girding the good sword he loued so well to his side, he rode forth at a Posterne gate so secretly as he could, not as yet resolued what to doe, riding towards the Armenian Host, but a contrary way, as if he had not come from the Assyrian Campe: being come to the Watch, they apprehended him, and he yelded, desiring to be carryed to their Generall, where being come, the Generall demanded of whence he was? I am qd. he of Arabia, hauing trauailed many yeares in search of strange aduentures. What is your name Sir, qd. he, my name is Honorius. Will you qd. he, serue me against my Foe the Assyrian? I will sayd he, if your quarrell be iust, serue you faithfully, and spend my life to punish disloyalty. With that the Generall repeated the History betweene him and Persicles, shewing the Title and claime he had to the Assyrian crowne, and amongst many other falshoods, accusing Montelyon for Praxentiaes rape, and Thetis death. This vexed Montelyon exceedingly, hoping one day to worke reuenge for all, vsing such behauiour and speech as was most fit for the time, so that he was well entertayned of the Generall, and granted such priuiledge as the rest of the Knights had, being neyther knowne, nor once suspected to be the man he was.

CHAP. XXXIX.

How *Delfurno* arrived at the *Armenian* Hoast.

The next day the Almaine Forces arriued in Armenia, and assuring himselfe that Delfurno would not be long behind, caused Philotheta to be adorned with most costly and rich Roabes, and to be well attended by a gallant traine of faire Damzels, which he did to please and delight him with her beauty. Philotheta supposed his entent in doing her so much honour, had beene eyther that he pretended Loue to her himselfe, or did it in the behalfe of Palian, which besides the abounding cares that possest her heart, bred a fresh disquiet in her, resoluing not to loue any but Montelyon. The same day Delfurno likewise, seeing no more would combat him, came to the Court, and discouered himselfe to the King of Armenia and Macedonia, yet desiring to conceale the same, who with great honour

and courteſie entertained him: and the more to pleaſe him, conducting her to the Pallace, where the Queenes of Macedonia and Armenia were, accompanied by Praxenita, but all in mourneſull weedes: and Philotheta glittering in gold, dazeling the eyes of the beholders. Which when Delfurno beheld, at the firſt view his heart was attainted with loving admiration, euen then vowing his heart her thrall, and of that ſudden becomming ſo bounden a ſubject to Loue, as his heart, Hands, Eyes, and euery Member, were deuoted to her ſeruice. After ſalutations to all the reſt, (who yet knew him not) forgetting longer to conceale himſelfe, he came to Philotheta, ſaluting her with theſe ſpeches: Lady blame me not for vndertaking to be the Champion of your Beauty: I am the Knight that haue theſe many dayes held Combate againſt all Knights in your behalfe, not hauing diſcouered to any your Name, as fearing thereby to offend you: the originall of my attempt, being the earneſt zeale and loue I beare to you. Sir, replyed ſhe, your labour was greater then your reward, and more then you needed to haue vndertaken, and little pleaſeth me: therefore I pray leaue off to doe ſo, and then I ſhall thinke my ſelfe more beholden to you, the ſubject not anſwering the Proteſtation.

Delfurno was nipt with her reply, and ſo much rauiſhed to heare her heauenly voyce, that he was to ſeeke of a reply, ſtanding ſo long in deepe ſtudy, that ſhe turned from him, and he ſtarted as aſhamed of that ouerſight, comming to the Kings of Armenia and Macedonia, to whom he ſayd: This Ladyes beauty ſurpaſſeth all that euer I beheld, I pray tell me of whence ſhe is? Her name quoth Armenia, is Philotheta, Daughter to a Duke in Arabia, whom if it pleaſe your Highneſſe to accept of, ſhe I know will yeeld to any honourable requeſt. I like her well indeed quoth Delfurno, and doe me that fauour I may enioy her, and I will binde my ſelfe your euerlaſting Friend. Many other ſpeeches paſt betwixt them, both of them promiſing to effect his deſire with ſpeed, eſpecially the King of Armenia, who preſently left him, and finding her out; he vttered theſe ſpeeches to her. Faire Lady, ſuch happineſſe may befall you at this inſtant, if you will be ruled by my counſell, which if your refuſe this, and liue many thouſand yeares after, you ſhall neuer light on the like, for the Mightieſt Emperour in the world ſeeketh your Loue with honourable reſolution to make you his Wife, renoun-

your

you with the Title of Empresse: this Knight that euen now offered his seruice to you is he, the Emperour of Almaigne, named Dessurno, that hearing of your beauty, came purposely into this country to behold you, and doe you seruice.

Philotheta hearing so old a man become so earnest a solicitor, being neither pleased with his campany nor counsell, gaue him this short answere. Your proffers are as great as liberall: yet neither pleasing nor acceptable to me, for I liue in this place by constraint, not by consent, by which meanes my minde can thinke on nothing, but to be released from hence, desiring to liue in an other place.

CHAP. XX.

How the *Knight of the Oracle* [illegible] *Phylotheta*, and how she was by the King of *Armenia* committed to his charge.

MOntelyon stayed all this while below among other Knights in the Hall, at such time as Phylotheta, came to goe into the Garden, with a gallant traine of Damzels attending her.

Montelyon noting her well, suddenly remembring he had seene her, felt such a Passion oppresse his heart, that he thought it melted within him: When she was past, he demanded what Lady that was, that was so gallantly attended? Her name (quoth one) is Philotheta, Daughter to a Duke in Arabia, that was so lately surprised in Assyria, and brought thither with intent to be married to Dessurno the Emperour. Montelyon hearing that, held his peace, getting from the company into a solitary place, where being alone, he vttered these Meditations. And can it be that Phylotheta was in Assyria, in her own person, and an others name to bring a Message to me? That need I not doubt of, for Raleaes speeches confirmed it: but may it not be that she sent some other? that cannot be, for they tell me she was surprized in Assyria: Moreouer, Ralea told me, that she came in the Disguise of a Palmer, which Palmer I am assured was euen the very same that trayned me to Praxentiaes presence, Whom I now presently remember, had the selfe-same countenance of Phylotheta, which made me affect him so much. These remembrances, may be assurances that she rather hateth then loueth mee, for otherwise I cannot be perswaded, and then the taske I haue vndertaken ouer-tedious: for it will be in daine to seeke her loue that

regar-

regardeth me not. Beſides, did ſhe loue me, yet hauing thruſt mſelfe amongſt ſuch a multitude of mine Enemies, that if they knew me would end my life: it is impoſſible for me to make my Loue knowne to her, yea, or ſo much as to ſpeake to her: What hope is there then left for me, but to Deſpaire, or returne to my Parents, ſeeke to win her poſſeſſion by force of Armes.

Whileſt he yet continued in theſe Meditations, he eſpyed the King of Armenia comming towards him, to whom he did great Reuerence. The King ſuddenly ſeeing him, as ſoone remembred he told him he was of Arabia, which made him vtter theſe ſpæches. Well met Honorius, I thinke thou toldeſt me thou wert of Arabia, and therefore it commeth in my minde, that thou art the onely man mayeſt pleaſure me, if thou will vndertake for me, being a matter of ſmall labour, but much importance: Which if thou will but vndertake, and keepe ſecrecy conceale, thy reward ſhall be ſo great as thy heart can wiſh. My Lord (quoth he) whatſoeuer it be, I will vndertake it, doing my vttermoſt indeauour therein, with ſuch ſecrecy and diligence, as you ſhall like of. I doe both truſt and beleeue thee (ſayd he) for in thy face I ſee the ſparks of Honour: therefore this it is. There is in my Court a Lady of thy Countrey, named Philotheta, whom I had thought to haue matched with the Emperour Delfurno, but now my Minde is altered, and I purpoſe to enjoy her my ſelfe: and for that thou art her Countrey man, I thinke thou mayſt preuaile more to perſwade her then any other: therefore I haue choſen thee as my Friend, yea my deare friend, to ſollicite my ſute vnto her: But thou muſt not be knowne but that thou doeſt onely ſpeake in the behalfe of Delfurno: for ſo will I tell him. This is that I would haue thee performe: therefore tell me, art thou Reſolued to doe it? Were the taske farre greater, I would vndertake it, but in this I thinke my ſelfe exceedingly honoured by your Highneſſe, hoping to preuaile ſo much, that you ſhall attaine your deſire. Then come with me (qd he.) Then did he bring him to Philothetaes Lodging, whether ſhe was newly returning, and vttered theſe ſpæches to her. Lady, for that you are a ſtranger, ſollitary, and vnacquainted with the Armenians guiſe, I haue brought this Knight, not to be your Guardiant, for I make you no priſoner, but to accompany you, and to defend you if any ſhould offer you wrong, whom I hope you will accept of. Philotheta liked his proffer

ter well, hoping he would proue a meanes for her to escape by, accepted his proffer with hearty thankes.

CHAP. XLI.

Of the first Conference betwixt *Philotheta* and the *Knight of the Oracle.*

MOntelyon being alone with the Lady he had so long desired to see, and being now her Keeper that he so dearely loued, thought himselfe most fortunate, doing humble reuerence to Philotheta: Who demaunded his name. My name sayd he, is Honorius. Then did she demaund whose son he was? for which he had not an answere ready, but stood silent, not caring to be taken in a lye, for that he was vnwilling to maintaine a lye. Philotheta seeing that, said, I perceiue I shall haue small comfort by thy company, for I see you are not of Arabia. Lady, sayd he, whatsoeuer I am, I rest wholly to doe whatsoeuer you shall commaund me. Then should you not quoth shee, please him that brought you to me, for his minde and mine are quite contrary, else would he not haue trusted you. Admit I did quoth he, yet hauing no intent to doe it, but thereby to enioy your presence, you haue no cause to suspect me. Yet I thinke you are deceiued in his intent, for none but my selfe knoweth it, which I care not to reueale to you, if you will conceale it from him, for I came hither to doe you pleasure, not to further him. Tell it me, quoth shee, and I promise you I will conceale it. Thus it is, whereas he with great earnestnesse hath sued vnto you in the behalfe of Delfurno, he hath appointed me to be a more earnest solicitor in his behalfe: for that hee himselfe is deeply in loue with you, but hee intendeth that Delfurno shall thinke I am onely imployed to pleasure him. Which when he imparted vnto me, and willingly vndertooke, not to doe it, but to doe you all the humble seruice and duty that I can being neyther of this Court, nor of Arabia, but a Knight of Assiria, that haue vowed neuer to leaue searching vntill I had found you: the occasion whereof was this. Vpon a day walking in a Grous, adioyning to the Pallace Garden, I heard a Knight whome afterwards I well knew, making much lamentation for your absence that nothing but newes of your safety could ease his heart. I discloſed my selfe vnto him, and for the loue that I bare him, vowed

to trauell in your ſeruice, firſt arriuing in this Court, where to my exceeding ioy I haue found you, with all humility, faith, and constancy, proffering you my ſeruice, being ready to vndertake any taske, and vndergoe any perill to doe you ſeruice, I know not how to truſt thee quoth thee, conſidering thou regardeſt not to breake thy Word to the King of Armenia, therefore I feare thou wilt doe the like to me: yet if fayre words may deceiue me I ſhall be deceiued in thine. I would truſt thee but I cannot, and yet blame me not, for hauing found no friendſhippe nor truth in many, I know not how to truſt any. My fortune was euer yet aduerſe, and therefore I am without hope of better: then leaue me for this time, and if you can find in your heart to be true to helpe me, I may hereafter be better aduiſed to beleeue and imploy you: which words ended, they parted.

CHAP. XLII.

Of the ſorrow that was made in the *Aſſirian* campe for the *Knight of the Oracles* abſence.

NOw let vs returne to ſpeake of Perſicles, who miſſing Montelyon, within ſhort ſpace after his departure, went to his Chamber to ſeeke him, and from thence, from place to place, but all in vayne, vntill at laſt he heard newes by a ſeruant, that there was a knight departed that day at a Poſterne gate, armed at euery point. Perſicles hearing that, returned to the Emperour, and certified him, and Conſtantia of his departure: both of them being ſtroken with ſudden griefe, eſpecially Conſtantias heart was ouercome with ſuch paſſion, that vntill the time of his returne, ſhe could neuer ſhake it off. Newes likewiſe was brought, that the Emperour of Almaigne was arriued with forty thouſand ſouldiers in ayde of the Kings of Armenia and Macedonia. Then beganne the Emperour of Perſia and Perſicles to aſſemble all the Nobility together to determine what to doe. A generall concluſion being agreed vpon, within two dayes to bid them battle. But the ſouldiers hearing of Montelyons departure, ſeemed to haue loſt their former courage, and to haue beene without comfort.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIII.

Of the scret practises of the King of *Armenia*, and the Emperor of *Macedonia* to deceiue each other of *Phylothetaes* loue, which they imparted to *Honorius Knight of the Oracle.*

MOntelyon being likewise no lesse sadde, to haue left them so carelesly, then they were for his absence: After hee had spent all the Night in sadde meditations, he arose carely with purpose to reueale himselfe and his loue to Philotheta, whatsoeuer ensued thereon: yet fearing eftsoone to disquyet her, he walked downe into a garden, where he had not stayed long, but he was saluted by Delfurno, who came to him of purpose to know if he had yet motioned his sute to Philotheta. Who answered him, that he had had much conference with her the last night about it, and how shee had deferred him for that dayes answere. Thereupon Delfurno promised him great rewards, and he as much fidelity, as being contented with his speeches he departed: He was no sooner gone, but the King of Macedonia came in, whose heart was grounded vpon a new subiect that Montelyon thought not off, for he determined, that none should enioy Philotheta but onely himselfe, and therefore came to make tryall whither this supposed Honorius would condiscend to be ruled by him: which if he would doe, then hee thought to conuey Philotheta secretly into Macedonia, so as neither Delfurnio, nor the King of Armenia should haue any suspect therof, To this effect hee communed with Honorius, first binding him to be secret, then by gifts inticing him, and lastly, dealing by intreaty, vntill he had vttered the depth of his mind, which he promised to effect, vsing such words as pleased the King, wherewith hee went away contented. Whilest Montelyon and the King of Macedonia were thus in conference, the King of Armenia was entring the Garden, but seeing them in such discoursing he withdrew himselfe vntill they were parted, and then he came in, demanding what good newes he had for him. My Liege, replyed he, the last motion you made to her about her marriage to Delfurno hath hindred your owne: for I had much a doe to perswade her that you had any intent at all to loue her, that were so earnest for another: but notwithstanding that, I hope soone to alter her, and bring her to a better liking of your affection. The Emperor

hath bene with me already, earneſtly ſoliciting me to proſecute his ſuite with efficacie. Likewiſe hath the King of Macedonia, with many promiſes, deſired me to vſe what perſwasions I could in the Emperours behalfe: but for that by your Maieſty I am ſo honourably eſteemed of, I will trie the vttermoſt of my ſkill to pleaſure you: I thanke thee good Honorius, quoth he, and I will for thy kindneſſe yeeld thee ſo large recompence as thy heart can wiſh. Which ſaid, he departed.

O what an office haue I vndertaken, ſaid Montelyon, to vndertake to ſue for thoſe others, that dare not ſpeake for my ſelfe, and yet contrary to my liking am enforced to vſe it, onely to ridde my ſelfe from griefs. Yet becauſe the time affordeth me opportunity to worke mine owne weale, I will try whether ſhe doth pitty me or no.

CHAP. XLIIII.

How the *Knight of the Oracle* diſcouered himſelfe to *Philotheta*: And how by a ſtratageme hee conuayed her thence in ſafetie. And what ioy was made for both their ſafeties.

VVHich when he had ſaid, he preſently went to Philothetaes Lodging, whom he found in a ſad and heauy meditation, but ſhe ſuddenly eſpying him comming towards her, turned her face from him, refuſing to heare him ſpeake, as ſuppoſing his ſpeeches would haue tended to perſwade her to the loathed liking he had motioned the day before. He ſeeing her vnwillingnes to heare knew the cauſe thereof, but yet emboldning himſelfe he ſaid, Vertuous Lady, pardon my boldneſſe, and withall vouchſafe to heare my ſpeech which ſhall not offend you: for I haue vowed not to vtter a word contrary to your liking. You will then ſay, proue periur'd, for I know your meſſage before you vtter it, ſe that wil diſpleaſe me. No deare Lady, ſaid he, I come not now to aske pitty for an other, but for my ſelfe, that ſometimes haue bene better knowne of you, I am the moſt vnfortunate Montelyon, that haue aduentured thus farre amongſt my Foes to ſeeke you out, my heart hauing honoured you, euer ſince my firſt ſight of you in the Hermits Cell in Arabia: Now I deſire you to pitty me, for without your fauour I am not my ſelfe, and in your fauour I ſhall account my ſelfe moſt fortunate. Philothea noting him, remembred perfectly, it

was

was he, which rauished her heart with ioy, saying, Most noble knight I account my selfe more then happy, in that you haue me in custody, whose vertuous minde I know will shelter me from dishonour: should I not yeild you thanks for deeming so well of me, that am not worthy. I might be condemned of rudenesse: therefore most humbly I thanke you, and withall desire you to pitty my estate, that is now racked vpon the Wheele of dispaire. Deare Lady, said he, I am most willing to doe you seruice, and I desire nothing more then to imploy my selfe to doe you good, for my life is yours, and all that I possesse with it, I humbly prostrate at your sacred feet, Desiring to conuay you hence into Assiria, where your Parents line in safety, inwardly sorrowfull for your absence. Whether if you will be directed by me I will conuey you with safety.

Sir, replyed Phylotheta, your vertuous kindnesse hath deserued more at my hands then I can yeild thanks for, then how should I behaue my selfe to the thing you desire, which is already fixed in my heart: I will rest so farre to be directed by you, as that my mind shall bee agreeable to yeild to any request you shall make. Then deare Ladie, said he, I will before to morrow this time, see you safe in my Fathers Court, for much mischiefe is pretended by these Kings of Macedonia and Armenia: both of them haue borne with me this day, and hired me to motion their loues to you, both of them seeking to enioy you, but so as the other shall not know thereof, each seeking to preuent the other, and both of them the Emperour, which they haue reuealed vnto me: but may I haue your licence, I will by that meanes deliuer you from they? custody. I most humbly desire you to doe it, quoth she, referring my selfe to your good directions, and committing all to your wisedomes election. Which said, Montelyon emboldning himselfe gaue and receiued so sweete a kisse, as seemed to breath forth a sweet exchange of each others Soules. Shee going to find out the King of Armenia, and hee into her priuate chamber.

Montelyon hauing found out the King of Armenia, tolde him how that the King of Macedonia went about to conuay Philotheta from thence, rehearsing all the conference that had past betwixt them: and withall, quoth he, the Emperour was with me this day, promising me great rewards, if I would doe the like for him. Now my Lord, my loue and duty to you, bindeth me onely to doe you ser-

and I haue vowed that my beſt endeuours ſhall be imployed onely to your good liking. The King hearing that both of them went about to deceiue him raged exceedingly, but truſting his Fidelity, he was quieted: aſking what he ſhould doe to preuent them both. My deare Lord (quoth he) this Euening you may effect your deſire, or els neuer: at which time, giue me but directions, whether I may conuey her to a place of ſecurity, or where we may meete you, and I will aduenture my life, but I will doe it: and by this meanes you ſhall deliuer your Signet vnto me, for our quiet paſſage forth at the Citie Gate, and then may we meete you where you will appoynt vs. And that ſhall be quoth he at Fryer Barnards Cell without the Citie, if you know it, and there is my Signet. Thither will I conuay her (quoth he) at twelue a Clocke. Farewell then (quoth the King) be but Faithfull, and thou ſhalt find my friendſhip ſuch, as ſhall highly reward thy paines.

Montelyon hauing effected this, preſently went to the King of Macedonia, telling him how the Emperours importunacie was ſuch, that it was high time, (either then, or neuer) to conuay Philotheratheuce, whom he found willing to yeild thereunto. Hee hearing that, deſired his counſell, promiſing well to reward him, intreating him to doe it for him, and both himſelf and his Kingdome ſhould be at his commaund. Deliuer me (quoth Montelyon) your Signet for my Walle, and appoint the place and Time, and I will bring her thither. There is my Signet (quoth hee) the place, at Fryer Barnards Cell, and the time, one of the Clocke. After many other ſpeches they parted.

Montelyon without ſtay went to the Emperour, with ſubmiſſe behauiour, telling him how that Philotheta did greatly affect him, and had ſent him to make an humble requeſt vnto him: which was, that we might be conuayed in ſecreſſe from the Campe, for that many dangers did inuiron her in that place, and that of ſuch importance, as did concerne his life, whereon her ſafety depended: which for that they were of weight, ſhe would reueale to none but himſelfe, deſiring him not to come to her, for that his perſon might thereby be indangered. Delfurno hearing this, was exceeding much troubled in his minde, yet glad to heare that ſhe eſteemed him, ſaid: Honorius, I would as gladly effect any thing to content her, as I would to ſaue mine owne life, yet doe I not know how, vnleſſe by thy directions:

there-

therefore doe but counſell me, and I will yéeld to that which thou ſhalt adviſe. My noble Lord, quoth he, the ſafeſt way is, this night ſecretly to conuay her through the gate where your Souldiers lye, and I will bring her to Fryer Barnards Cell, about eleuen of the Clocke, where you may be ready to receiue her, and with a ſufficient Guard of Knights to conuay her into Almaigne, or any place of ſecurity. Moreouer, my Lord, ſhe willed me to aſſure you, that both the king of Armenia and Macedonia, hauing diſloyally forgotten their promiſe to you, ſéeke to win her loue to themſelues, which diſhonour ſhe cannot endure to be done againſt you. Delfurno was much grieued to heare that, yet hoping to preuent them both, hée queted himſelfe, deliuering his Signet to Montelyon, with many thankes and much intreaty, deſiring him to be carefull, that nothing might preuent their purpoſe.

Montelyon being glad of this, thought not ſo to end, but preſently went to the Queene of Macedonia, telling her the Kings complot, for conuaying of Philotheta thence, ſhewing her his Signet: which when ſhée beheld, exceeding griefe poſſeſt her heart, to thinke of his diſloyalty. Montelyon ſéeing that, ſaid. Notwithſtanding, hée hath attempted this, I know the Ladyes vertues to be ſuch, as ſhée will rather ſuffer the extreameſt miſery in the world, then yéeld thereto: and for my ſelf, though hée hath promiſed me great rewards, I reſpect more mine owne honour, then to be the agent in ſo wicked an Act, therefore to aſſure, that I entend it not, I yéeld you his Signet, whereby I ſhould haue paſt the Campe, to meete at Bernards Cell. I thanke thee gentle Knight quoth ſhee: and for this deede commaund me any thing, and thou ſhalt obtaine it. My ſelfe will meete him there, and by that meanes, I hope to make him giue ouer the like attempts.

Montelyon being gone from her, went to the Queene of Armenia, telling her the like, and indeed the truth of her Lord, both deliuering her his Signet and all other directions for her to meete him by: leauing her ſo mad with rage and ielouſie, that ſhe was ready to teare her haire: yea euen with bitter exclaimes to reueale her miſchiefe, but that ſhe referred it vntill ſhe might ſurprize him with a guilty conſcience at Barnards Cell.

By this time it grewe to be night, and after ſupper, was ended, both Delfurno, the King of Armenia, and of Macedonia, making

more

more then wonted haſte to breake companie, each being glad that the other was ſo willing to part, which the two Queenes noted, as prime to theyr drifts.

Montelyon likewiſe got him to Philotheta, telling her, that he had ſo preuailed with Delfurno, that he had gotten his Signet, as their warrant to paſſe through the Campe, entreating her to bee in a readineſſe to goe with him, deſiring her to feare no daunger, for his life ſhould ſhield her. She granted to goe with him, deſiring him to ſtay there, vntill the time appoynted which hee performed, paſſing the time in priuate conference with her, to both their likings. The time being come, and all things ſilent, Montelyon armed himſelfe, leading Philotheta out of the Court, paſſing all the guards, watches, and garriſons, by ſhewing the Emperours Signet, and comming where the Souldiers lay, they likewiſe let him goe, vntill they were without the Citie gates. Montelyon hauing without daunger effected this, turned his ſteppes directly towards his owne City, which was not farre off, and therefore with eaſe they gate thither. Being come to the Citie gates, the watch eſpying them, demanded who was there. Montelyon bad them come downe and ſee: they came downe and tooke them in, beginning to examine them: but Montelyon diſcouered himſelfe as loath to ſtay there, yet commanding them to conceale it, and to carry him as a priſoner to Delatus which they performed, where they knocked, and were let in. Delatus and Alſala knowing him, did him humble reuerence, reioycing in their hearts to ſee him ſo safely returned. But Montelyon vnvailing Philotheta, Alſala preſently knew her, with teares of ioy welcomming her, whileſt the old Duke melted with paſſion to behold his Daughter, whom from her infancy he had not ſeene: embracing her in his armes, and a thouſand times killing her tender cheeke. Theſe embracings being paſt, Montelyon ſayd, Lady, ſince you are now in ſafety with your parents, my promiſe is performed, deſiring you to haue regard to the paſſions I endure, which time will not now permit me to vtter, but leaue to your courteous conſideration: therefore I beſeech you in mine abſence, let my loyalty be regarded, and your gentle heart willing to pitty me. Which ſaid, with a ſecond kiſſe he left her, to ſubmit himſelfe to his parents.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLV.

Of the diſcord that befell betwixt the Emperour of *Almaigne*, the Emperour of *Macedonia*, and the King of *Armenia*, about *Philotheta's* departure. Of a merry ieſt that befell the two Ladyes. And of the deſolation of the *Armenian* Hoaſt.

FIrſt the Emperour chuſing vnto him ſome few truſty Knights that he meant ſhould conuay Phylotheta into Almaigne, ſecretly went vnto Bernards Cell, where he ſhrowded himſelfe vnder a tuft of Cipreſſe trées, ſaying the comming of Phylotheta, but it was an houre before any came, and the firſt was the K. of Macedonia, who attended by one Gentleman, came towards the Cell, whom when Delfurno beheld, he alone ſtept vnto her, ſaying. My deare Philotheta, I am ſorry that for my ſake you ſhould take ſuch paines as at this vnſeaſonable time to be abroad, for which I render all the thanks that a conſtant heart can. She hearing that, taking him to be her Lord, yelded him many thanks, purpoſing to try the vttermoſt concluſion, before ſhe reuealed her ſelfe ſaying: Had I not aſſured my ſelfe of your Loue, I would not haue come hither: but being here, I reſt at your diſpoſition: Delfurno then embraced her oft times kiſſing her, and being of a quicke conceit, preſently bethought himſelfe if ſhe would condiſcend, to call vp the Fryer and be married. Lady (qd. he) ſince you haue vouchſafed to grant me Loue, enrich me alſo with poſſeſſion, which the more lawfully to effect, we will be marryed by Fryer Bernard. My L. replyed ſhe, I am contented: then did he call at the Fryers Cell, who ariſing, Delfurno taking him aſide, told him what he was, and the cauſe of his comming: who hearing that, preſently ioyned their hands. Delfurno then purpoſed not to conuey her thence, but returne to the Campe, which he performed. They were no ſooner gone, but the K. of Macedonia commeth to the Cell, and ere he could turne him about, the K. of Armenia, according to Montelyons directions, came thither. The King himſelfe taking her for Philotheta, at the firſt meeting embraced her with a ſweet Congee, vttering many ſpeeches to the ſetting forth of his loue, which ſhe anſwered as kindly, that he grew ſo bold, as he would haue had preſent poſſeſſion of her loue, but ſhe denyed that, alleadging that he had a Queene, who hearing of his Loue to her, would

ſake her death. Feare not that, deare Lowe, qd. he, for ere long I meane to make her ſure enough for euer troubling of you, therefore deny me not, but yeild me the fruition of thy loue, I will not, qd. ſhe without further aſſurance, for my mind preſageth ſome ill. Here is, qd. he, a Fryer hard by, will you conſent that he ſhall marry vs? To that ſhe agreed, and he called vp the Fryer the ſecond time, who much marueiling thereat, demanded the cauſe of his comming. Fryer, quoth he, the cauſe of my comming is to be married to this Lady, therefore I pray thee doe it without delay. The Fryer thinking that ſome mad ſpirits were abroad, or that ſome franticke dreame had ouercome his ſences, without asking any more queſtions married them, and ſent them away. The K. of Macedonia, carryed her into his Tent in the field, for that he durſt not goe to the Pallace, for feare of his wife, where he ſtayed with her all night.

Laſt of all the K. of Armenia, premeditating what ſpeeches to vſe to ſet forth his loue, reſting himſelfe vpon a banks ſide, hard by Bernards Cell, ſtaying their comming the ſpace of an houre, with great patience, but when an houre was paſt, & then another, & third neare ended, he waxed impatient, fearing to be diſappointed, but ſeeing they came not, at laſt he miſdoubted he had miſtaken the time, and ſtayed too long, that being much troubled he knocht at Bernards Cell, who ſtarted from his Bed, as one affrighted, wondring what accident had driuen ſo many to his Cell that night. And coming to the doore, the K. of Armenia demanded, if there had bin a Lady that night. Yes, qd. he, here hath bin two, but what they were I know not. It was aſſuredly Phylotheta, and with her Delfurno, to whom I married her: but what the other two were I know not: The King hearing that, in a rage ran backe to the K. of Macedoniaes tent, deſiring to ſpeake with him, the Guard knowing him, let him in, and he ſtanding by his beds ſide, ſayd. Brother of Macedon, the lady whom we determined to marry to Delfurno is this night fled, and for that deed we ſhall loſe his friendſhip for euer. The K. of Macedonia hearing that, lay as one halfe amazed, not knowing what to ſay, and the Q. hearing her husband there, whom ſhe thought ſhe had embraced, trembled with feare. The K. of Macedonia ſeeing there was no remedy, but that his deed muſt of neceſſity be diſcouered, ſayd, King of Armenia, it is ſo, I haue Phylotheta in my cuſtody, and her I will enjoy, for ſhe lyeth folded in mine armes. By heauen qd. the K. of

Arme-

Armenia, thy life ſhall not ſatisfie the diſhonour thou haſt done vs. With that he drew his ſword, and he ſtarting from his bed to reach his to defend himſelfe, in which time the K. of Armenia catching hold on her as ſhe lay, drew her forth into the floore, where beholding her he was then much more enraged, being ready to kill her, but that the K. of Macedonia preuented him: who likewiſe ſeeing her, ſtood as one amazed, whileſt ſhe haſted to apparell her ſelfe, and ran from thence vnto the Pallace. The King of Armenia vowing reuenge, went from the Macedonian Tent, and preſently cauſed his Drum to ſtrike vp alarum, and commanded his Souldiers to deſtroy the Macedonians, who according to his command, ſuddenly ſet vpon them, that there began an exceeding ſlaughter amongſt them. The Emperor hauing newes thereof, ſuppoſing the cauſe had bin for the loſſe of Phylothera, commanded 2. of his Knights to go vnto eyther of them, and deſire them to be pacified vntill they had diſcouered their griefes to him, which he could eaſily remedy, if not he would become a friend to one of them. The Meſſengers found them both together in ſingle combat, & deliuered their Meſſage, but it was long before eyther of them would goe to him, yet at laſt they went both: To whom Delfurno ſayd: My Lords, I beleeue your ſtrife ariſeth from the loſſe of Philothera, if that be the cauſe contend no longer, for as you were both willing I ſhould enjoy her, ſo I haue this night had poſſeſſion of her loue, being lawfully married vnto me at Bernards Cell. The King of Armenia what with rage and jealouſie, not well knowing what he did, drew the Curtaines, and diſcouered their wiues, the Queene of Macedonia, who ſeeing her Honour ſo betrayed, lay quite bereft of ſence, but comming againe to her ſelfe ſhe cryed out for pardon, alleadging ſhe was betrayed: but there was now no time of parley, for all of them were enraged, and as well Delfurno as the reſt, betooke themſelues to Armes. But the Queene of Macedonia humbling her ſelfe at her husbands feet, ſayd: Both you, my ſelfe, and all of vs are deceiued: Honorius yeſternight declared vnto me, that you intended priuily to carry Phylothera from hence. I requeſted him to counſell me how to preuent you, whereupon he told me, that you had appointed to meet with him and her at Bernards Cell, and for his Paſſe he had receiued your ſignet, which at my earneſt intreaty he deliuered me, I thinking to ſurprize you there, came thither, where the Emperour as I now perceiue met

me whom I tooke to be your ſelfe, and he taking me to be Philotheta, that went to Bernards Cell, I ſtill concealed my ſelf, thinking I had not offended, but now I ſee I am betrayed. Lady qd. he, I willingly pardon this fault, having committed the ſame with the M. of Armenia, & in the ſame manner deceiued by Honorius. The Emp. hearing that, ſent a Meſſenger to ſee if Philotheta were in the Court, but he returned. Newes, that both ſhe and Honorius were not to be found, The Emperour then ſayd, that Knight hath deceiued vs all, therefore let vs be friends. Contented qd. the King of Macedonia. By heauen qd. the King of Armenia, I will not beare this diſhonour, but be reuenged to the full, and cauſe thee repent that euer thou offeredſt ſuch diſhonour to Armenia. The K. of Macedonia could not brooke his words, but in a rage made this reply. I know, qd. he, thou art a tyrant, and regardeſt not the lawes humaine nor diuine, as may be ſeene by the vniuſt title thou layeſt to the Crowne of Aſſyria, which is forged, and were it not to reuenge my Daughters diſhonor & Sons death, I would not haue offered armes againſt that worthy King. Therefore ſince thou art ſo peremptory, do thy worſt, for I regard thee not. The K. of Armenia went from thence ſetting vpon the Macedonians. And the K. of Macedonia forſooke his Tents to defend himſelfe. The Emp. preſently commanded his Forces to march forth of the City.

CHAP. XLVI.

How the *Knight of the Oracle* and *Perſicles*, ſuddenly iſſuing out, deſtroyed the whole *Armenian* Hoaſt.

MOntelyon knowing that ſome ſtratageme would follow his laſt nights policie, after he had ſubmitted himſelfe to his Parents and the Emperor, he armed himſelfe in the armour which was giuen him by the Heſperian Nymphs, & preſently mounted himſelfe leading his ſtrety thouſand Souldiers forth of the City, which likewiſe he performed before the Emperor or Perſicles heard thereof: who at laſt being certified, ſent for him to know the cauſe: this night qd. he, ſhall we ſurpize our Enemies, who are now together by the eares within themſelues. Perſicles thereupon armed himſelfe, and Deloratus, Piſor, Cothanes, & many other Knights of great fame marching thitherwards, where they heard ſuch direll alarums, as though the City had bin vtterly deſtroyed. And being come neere the

City

City, they beheld the Emperor in the field, to whom Perſicles ſent a Herald, to certifie him that Perſicles was neuer foe to the Almaigne and therefore ſent to know if Delfurno had any quarrel againſt him. Delfurno returned anſwer, that he was neuer foe to Perſicles. Montelyon was the firſt that entred the City, and ſet vpon his Enemies with ſuch fury, that many of them loſt their liues, and the day being light, diſcouered ſuch a cruell ſlaughter as eye hath not beheld. The K. of Armenia and Macedonia were then in cruell combat together, betwixt whom, Montelyon ſtept, ſaying: Striue not to deſtroy one another, but defend your ſelues, for I am come to doe that. They knowyng him to be the Knight of the Oracle, were ſo amazed, as if they had bene ſurpriſed with a ſudden trance, running ſeuerall wayes to call backe their Souldiers from deſtroying one another, to defend themſelues: but before they could ſet themſelues in any good order, the Aſſyrians were ſo intermingled amongſt them, that before they were aware they loſt their liues. Palian ſeing themſelues ſo ouertaken, perceiued it was in vaine to ſtriue for victory, ſtole forth of the City to Delfurno, intreating him not to forſake them: but he knowing diſaduantage had ſeized on them, refuſed, letting him returne without comfort, & entring into the City, he found his father grieuouſly wounded, and ready to yeeld to Montelyons ſword, at whom he ran with ſuch fury, that he wounded him in the thigh: Montelyon ſeing that and knowing him, let driue at him with great courage, & continued combat againſt him, whileſt the K. of Armenia began to withdraw himſelfe, Montelyon ſeing that, ſtroke ſo forcible a blow at Palian, that he aſtonisht him, and with that ouertooke the King, at the firſt blow cutting in ſunder his wriſt which had loſt his Gauntlet, & at the next thruſting his Sword quite through his body. Palian by this recouered himſelfe, & looking about him, beheld his fathers tragedy, ayming himſelfe to reuenge. Montelyon ſeing him comming welcomed him with ſo cruell a blow, that his Armour flew in pieces. Palian would haue done the like, had not Montelyons Armour bene of vnwonted ſtrength. But in the end he fled, finding himſelfe too weake to reſiſt him. Perſicles and Deloratus all this while ranged vp and downe, deſtroying ſuch as they met, vntill at laſt they encountred the King of Macedonia, and his two ſons, accompanied with 4. other Knights of Macedonia that made exceeding ſlaughter where they went. Perſicles ran at the King, and in the encounter ouerthrew him, but his

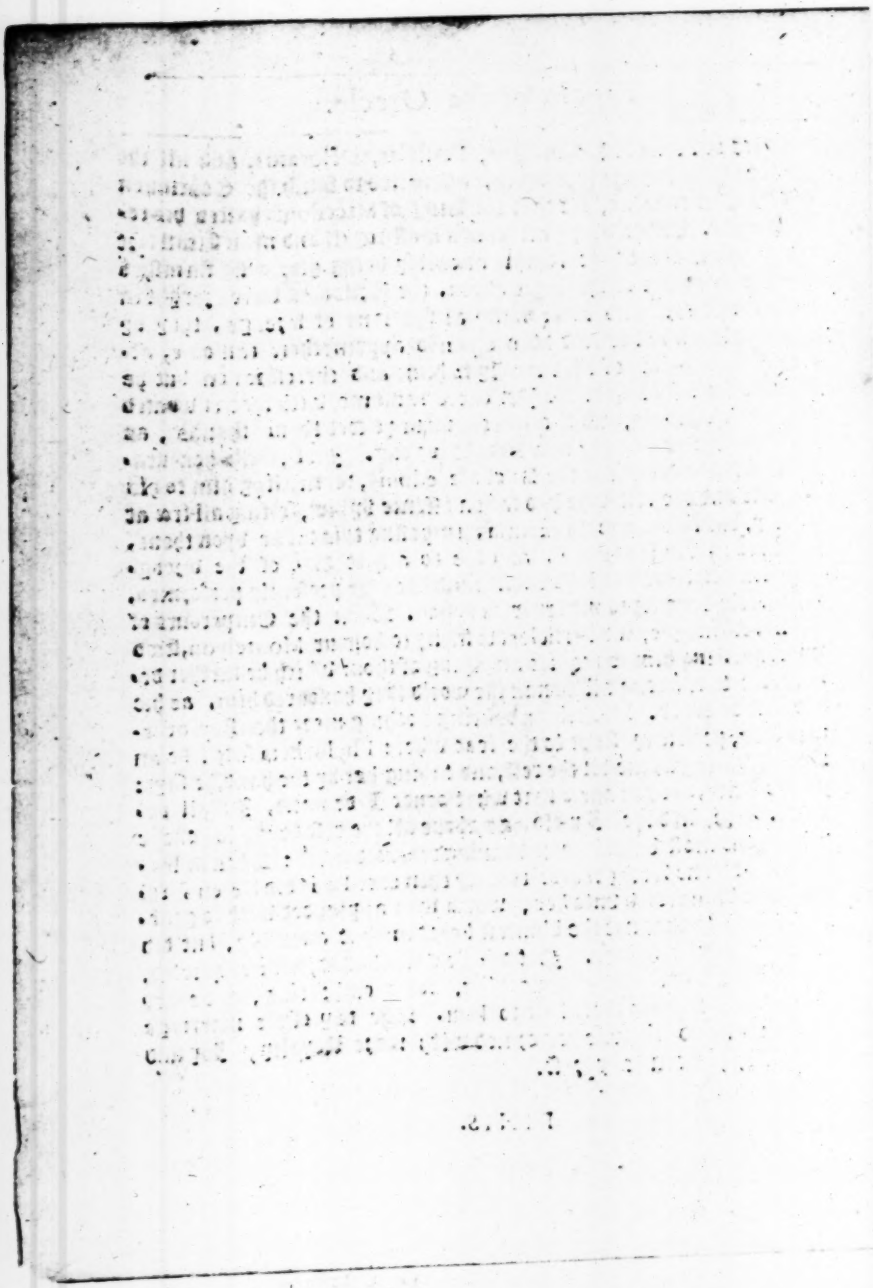
eldeſt ſonne ſtept to his reſcue, and with an vnlucky blow wounded Perſicles on the thigh: then began an vnequall combat betwixt them for thoſe fire ſet vpon Perſicles and Deloratus, who continued combat againſt them by the ſpace of an houre, till both ſides were grieuouſly wounded, eſpecially Perſicles & Deloratus had bled ſo much, that they were ready to faint. Montelyon came moſt fortunately to their reſcue, who eſpying his Father and Deloratus in ſuch danger, was ſo inraged, that he ran at one of them with ſuch force, that he ſlew him, and within few blows, left another bereft of ſence, and offending a third with ſuch puiſſant blowes, that he could not tell, whether he might ſtay or run away. An other ſeeing that, ioyned himſelfe in combat with him, continuing it but a ſhort ſpace, for he was ſone ſo ſore wounded, that he was not able to reſiſt Perſicles being ſore wounded before, yet ſo valiantly behaued himſelfe, that one of them lay dead at his feet, and the other fled from Montelyon: then began a deſolation in the Hoaſt, for the Armenians cryed flye, flye, and the other kill, that of a ſuddein the maſſacre was ſo hote, that the Chanels of the City, began to run with bloud, and none could hardly ride or paſſe on but for dead carkaſſes. Then began the Citizens to run on heapes, the two Queenes betooke themſelues to flight with Praxentia, but were taken by Piſor. Palian was taken priſoner by Deloratus, and the King of Macedonia, and his two ſonnes by Perſicles and Montelyon. The ſouldiers that were left, fled forth of the City and hid themſelues in the fields, and the Citizens, ſo many as could eſcape the ſword, vpon their knees intreated Perſicles to ſpare their liues, who yelded vpon condition they would pay to euery common Souldier a 100. Crowns and to euery Leader 500. which they performed. Perſicles then ſounded retreat, and drew his Forces out of the City, appointing Gariſons to keep the ſame to his vſe. Delfurno at his return met him, and offered to conclude a league of amity with him, which he kindly accepted, riding together to the City of Piſos, where they were receiued with exceeding ioy, eſpecially Montelyon to whom all men attributed the glory of that victory.

After this victory atchieued, to the great and exceeding applaud of Montelyon. Perſicles cauſed all the dead bodyes to be buryed, thoſe that yelded to be pardoned, the maymed to bee carryed to Hoſpitals to be cured, and euery Souldier to be ſent away well rewarded, and highly contented. And within few dayes after the Em-

perour

perours of Perſia and Almaigne, Perſicles, Deloratus, and all the Nobles there, except Priſoners, aſſembled to finiſh the Concluſion of this Controuerſie, for that the King of Macedonia hated his releaſement. When being all ſet in a moſt royall and maieſticall ſort the places neere to that royall aſſembly being gloriouſly furniſhed with the beauties of ſhining Ladyes, the Priſoners were brought in honourable ſort, and after many allygations of wrongs, they by a generall conſent deſired Montelyon to appoint their ranſome, attributing the glory of that victory to him, and therefore none but he to haue the diſpoſing of the Priſoners ranſome, with that vnwonted grauity, wiſedome, and decent behauiour gaue them thanks, as was ſeldome to be ſeene in a Knight ſo yong. Firſt, with honourable courteſie embracing the K. of Macedonia, reconciling him to his Queene and the reſt, who had taken offence by him, ſetting all free at liberty, but Palian and Praxentia, impoſing this taske vpon them, Palian to marry Praxentia, and ſhe to acquit him of the wrongfull accuſation ſhe had layd vpon him, which ſhe preſently performed, yet vtterly denying to marry with Palian. Then the Emperours of Perſia, Almaigne, and Perſicles, deſiring to honour Montelyon, ſtood vp, requeſting him to require any thing of them which he further deſired, for that aboue all men in the world they honoured him, as he had beſt deſerued. Montelyon deſiring nothing more then Phylothetaes loue, preſently ſtept to the ſeat where Phylotheta ſate like an Angell ſhining aboue all the reſt, and taking her by the hand, he ſayd: Fayre Lady, doe you agree that whatſoeuer I demand, I ſhall obtaine. Yes, ſayd ſhe. I yeild, as aboue all the reſt bound to honour you, as one moſt vnworthy, yet hauing receiued moſt: Then he leading her downe with greater royalty then euer Paris did Helen, required to be married vnto her, which was applauded with ſo generall a conſent, that not the blunteſt heart in that aſſembly, but did leape with exceeding ioy. Not a ſeule diſcontented, none diſquieted, but all reioycing, ſome commending, ſome embracing, and euery one deſirous to ſhew their loue to him. The day of the marriage appointed, and likewiſe performed with more Royalty, Ioy and Pleaſure, then can be expreſt.

FINIS.



REPRODUCED FROM THE COPY IN THE

HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY

FOR REFERENCE ONLY. NOT FOR REPRODUCTION